

GENESIS

PART TWO

By Karen McCarthy M.D.

Genesis Part 2

Walking In the Garden with God

An in-depth study on Genesis Chapters 2-4
by Karen McCarthy M.D.

Table of Contents

| | |
|--|-----|
| Introduction | 5 |
| Lesson One – Review of the First Thirty-four Verses in Genesis | 15 |
| Lesson Two – Rain; God’s Spirit and the Creation of Man | 41 |
| Lesson Three – Examination of the Tree of Life and the Four rivers | 65 |
| Lesson Four – Christ and His Bride Seen in Adam and the Woman | 85 |
| Lesson Five – The Lies and Deception of the Old Serpent | 105 |
| Lesson Six – The Fall, Redemption and Walking with God | 123 |
| Lesson Seven – Salvation of the Spirit, Soul, and Body | 143 |
| Lesson Eight – The Headship of the Serpent’s Seed is Crushed | 165 |
| Lesson Nine – In Pain You Shall Bring Forth Children | 195 |
| Lesson Ten – Substitute Death and Shed Blood | 215 |
| Lesson Eleven – Guarding the Access to God | 241 |
| Lesson Twelve – Cain as a Type of Israel | 265 |
| Lesson Thirteen – Cain Avenged Sevenfold/Lamech Seventy-sevenfold | 289 |
| Key Points from Genesis Part 2 | 321 |
| Thank-You | 335 |
| Appendix | 337 |

The Book of Genesis – Part 2

Introduction

Genesis is the book of beginnings. It establishes the foundation for all of Scripture. Most of the Old Testament is written in the Hebrew text while the New Testament is written in the Greek text. The Hebrew name for Genesis is *Bereshith*, which means, “In beginning.”

The Septuagint is the ancient Greek translation of the Old Testament. The title for the first book of the Bible, Genesis, is derived from this Greek text rather than the Hebrew text. The transliteration of the Greek word Genesis has to do with “birth, origin, genealogy, lineage.” Genesis deals with the origins and generations (genesis) of the heavens and earth, and with the origins and generations (genesis) of Man. And Genesis covers almost half of human history.

Genesis not only provides us with beginning points, such as the creation of the heavens and the earth as well as the creation of man, but also adds some subsequent specific historical events as well. This first book of the Bible lays the foundation for the remainder of Scripture. In fact, as we will see, the first thirty-four verses of Genesis are the very foundation upon which the rest of Scripture is built!

The best place to begin the study of Scripture is where God began, the Book of Genesis. Also, a person must understand correctly that which God has revealed in this foundational Book.

Not only does Genesis describe the creation of the earth and of man, it also describes the reason why God created man. We will learn what that purpose is. Although man fell by his own disobedience, God’s plan to send His Son Jesus as the Redeemer and Restorer, is also revealed in the Book of Genesis. Genesis provides prophecy regarding the Savior of the world. He would be born through *the Seed of the Woman* (Genesis 3:15) and specifically through the bloodline of Abraham (Gen. 12ff). Most importantly, God’s Son, Jesus Christ, will rule with His

Bride from the heavens over the earth. Genesis shows us that there is a restored Kingdom out ahead, in the Age of Ages, when in His Glory!

The most important principle in studying the Word of God is to let the Scriptures be your commentary on Scripture. **We should study His Word in context.** We are instructed to “compare spiritual things with spiritual.”

1 Corinthians 2:12,13

*12 Now we have received, not the spirit of the world, but the Spirit who is from God, that we might know the things that have been freely given to us by God. 13 These things we also speak, not in words which man's wisdom teaches but which the Holy Spirit teaches, **comparing spiritual things with spiritual.***

If you have difficulty understanding passages of Scripture, ask the Lord to give you understanding as you continue to study His Word. Compare spiritual things with spiritual things and the Spirit of Truth will guide you.

John 16:13-15

13 "However, when He, the Spirit of truth, has come, He will guide you into all truth; for He will not speak on His own authority, but whatever He hears He will speak; and He will tell you things to come. 14 "He will glorify Me, for He will take of what is Mine and declare it to you. 15 "All things that the Father has are Mine. Therefore I said that He will take of Mine and declare it to you.

The Word of God is alive because it is God breathed, God inspired. It is His breath of life! It is what gives us spiritual life, and what sustains and nourishes us.

2 Timothy 3:16-17

16 All Scripture is given by inspiration of God, and is profitable for doctrine, for reproof, for correction, for instruction in righteousness, 17 that the man of God may be complete, thoroughly equipped for every good work.

It is our only source of absolute Truth. It is what God uses to convict and transform the mind, as He guides us in our wilderness journey.

Romans 12:2

2 And do not be conformed to this world, but be transformed by the renewing of your mind, that you may prove what is that good and acceptable and perfect will of God.

Jesus says in ***John 6:63***

63 It is the Spirit who gives life; the flesh profits nothing; the words that I have spoken to you are spirit and are life.

It takes time and discipline to study His Word, but it is certainly worth the effort! It must be studied line upon line, precept (lit. command, ordinance, law) upon precept.

Isaiah 28:10

10 For precept must be upon precept, precept upon precept, Line upon line, line upon line, Here a little, there a little."

As mentioned previously, in studying Scripture, it is wise to begin where God begins, in the Book of Beginnings. Let's look at where Jesus began when speaking to His disciples on the road to Emmaus.

Luke 24:27

27 And beginning at Moses and all the Prophets, He expounded to them in all the Scriptures the things concerning Himself.

Jesus began with Moses, who penned the first five books of the Bible (the Pentateuch) under the inspiration of God. The writings of Moses and of all the Prophets are essentially what makes up the whole Old Testament.

It says in Luke 24:27, that Jesus *expounded to them in all the Scriptures* (the Old Testament) *the things concerning Himself*. Expound means to interpret or unfold the meaning of what is said. Jesus is seen throughout the Old Testament and from there He unfolded the meaning of things concerning Himself to His disciples.

Additionally, Jesus instructs His disciples to seek first His Kingdom and His Righteousness in anticipation of His return as King of kings and Lord of lords. He is the One speaking in-

Matthew 6:33

33 "But seek first the kingdom of God and His righteousness, and all these things shall be added to you.

As you study, I pray you will see His Kingdom truths in this book and desire to continue to learn more and more about those truths. The Apostle Paul, praying for the Church at Colossae, writes:

Colossians 2:2-3

2 that their hearts may be encouraged, being knit together in love, and attaining to all riches of the full assurance of understanding, to the knowledge of the mystery of God, both of the Father and of Christ, 3 in whom are hidden all the treasures of wisdom and knowledge.

This was Paul's prayer for the Church; and this is my prayer for you as you work through this study.

Remember, there are great blessings for the Christian who diligently seeks Him.

Hebrews 11:6

6 But without faith it is impossible to please Him, for he who comes to God must believe that He is, and that He is a rewarder of those who diligently seek Him.

2 Timothy 2:15

15 Be diligent to present yourself approved to God, a worker who does not need to be ashamed, rightly dividing the word of truth.

According to this verse, how can a Christian be approved by God?

A Christian can be approved by God by *rightly dividing the word of truth*.

In Genesis Part 2, we will continue to examine, in detail, the verses beyond the first thirty-four verses of Genesis.

If you were unable to attend the Genesis Part 1 study, feel free to review it on your own. You can download a copy of this study on our church website at –

<https://cornerstonejacksonville.com/bible-studies/>

We will also be reviewing a summary of Genesis Part 1 in the first lesson.

May the Lord bless you for your faithfulness to seek Him in this study.

Ezra 7:10

10 For Ezra had prepared his heart to seek the Law of the LORD, and to do it, and to teach statutes and ordinances in Israel.

Helpful notes for studying God's Word

All Scripture is God breathed, God's inspiration.

2 Timothy 3:16-17

16 All Scripture is given by inspiration of God, and is profitable for doctrine, for reproof, for correction, for instruction in righteousness, 17 that the man of God may be complete, thoroughly equipped for every good work.

The phrase *inspiration of God* means God breathed, inspired by God. (It comes from the Greek word *theopneustos* with *theo* meaning God and *pneustos* meaning *breathe*. Interestingly, this phrase only occurs one time in Scripture.)

God's Word then is what gives us spiritual life and life in the age to come. It is our only source of truth. It is our spiritual nourishment, and it equips us to be complete, perfect.

Since this Book is so valuable, spending hours in the Word of God each day is time well spent. And it is important to rightly divide His Word as you diligently seek Him in His Word.

Study His Word in the context of the chapter (using at least ten verses before and ten verses after a passage), comparing Scripture with Scripture. And consider the text within the larger context, even beyond the chapter and book the passage is in.

When studying a passage or topic within Scripture, it is important to build upon the seven-day foundation given in the first thirty-four verses of Genesis. (That is why having a correct understanding of the first thirty-four verses in Genesis is so important.)

Ask and answer questions from the passage you are studying.

For example, in John 1:1-5 we read –

1 In the beginning was the Word, and the Word was with God, and the Word was God. 2 He was in the beginning with God. 3 All things were made through Him, and without Him nothing was made that was made. 4 In Him was life, and the life was the light of men. 5 And the light shines in the darkness, and the darkness did not comprehend it.

You might ask and answer the question, what was the Word in v.1?

How were all things made according to v.3?

What was the life of men according to v. 4?

What is darkness unable to comprehend according to v. 5 and what does comprehend mean in the original Greek language?

If you do a word search on the word *comprehend* you will see that this word means *overtake, seize upon*. In v.5 then, the phrase *the darkness did not comprehend it* means that the darkness cannot overtake the Light.

In this study, we will see that God uses types/antitypes in order for us to understand and rightly divide His Word.

A type can be a person, place, thing or institution, which points to something beyond itself. The antitype is the fulfillment of that type.

We will be discussing this in greater detail in our study but here is an example of types/antitypes –

Romans 5:14

14 Nevertheless death reigned from Adam to Moses, even over those who had not sinned according to the likeness of the transgression of Adam, who is a type of Him who was to come.

1Corinthians 15:45, 47

45 And so it is written, "The first man Adam became a living being." The last Adam became a life-giving spirit. ... 47 The first man was of the earth, made of dust; the second Man is the Lord from heaven.

In these passages we can see that Adam was a type of Jesus. Types/antitypes are given throughout Scripture. In this study we will see that Isaac is a type of

Christ, Joseph is a type of Christ, the articles within the Holy Place of the temple are a type of Christ. Types/antitypes are *treasures* given by God to help us come into a greater understanding of His Word and His plans and purposes for man.

If you do not understand a passage in Scripture, pray and ask the Holy Spirit to guide you into the correct understanding of His Word –

John 16:13

*13 "However, when He, the Spirit of truth, has come, **He will guide you into all truth**; for He will not speak on His own authority, but whatever He hears He will speak; and He will tell you things to come.*

Keep asking, keep seeking, keep knocking and He will show you all truth –

Matthew 7:7-8

7 "Ask, and it will be given to you; seek, and you will find; knock, and it will be opened to you. 8 "For everyone who asks receives, and he who seeks finds, and to him who knocks it will be opened.

And most importantly, our faith comes by hearing the Word of God and it continues to mature as we study it and faithfully obey it –

Romans 10:17

17 So then faith comes by hearing, and hearing by the word of God.

My prayer is that this study will give you a greater desire and understanding to *seek first the kingdom of God and His righteousness, **Matthew 6:33***

Good Bible resources, which are free, are the Olive Tree app and the Blue Letter Bible (on internet). Both have the root words and concordance and lexical aids for Scripture, which are helpful in correctly understanding His Word.

(Example: Bethlehem means house of Bread and Jesus was born in Bethlehem. He is the Bread of life, and He is the incarnate Word, the heavenly manna.)

I use the Hebrew Greek Key Study Bible in the New King James version (AMG publishers/Spiros Zodhiates). This Bible has the concordance, lexical aids and the Hebrew and Chaldee Dictionary within it.

(If using Zoom, make sure you have your strongest WIFI/internet connection set up. Have video camera enabled unless you have a poor signal with your WIFI. If that is the case, just have the audio enabled and you should still be able to hear the Bible study and participate.

Please keep your microphones muted. This way we will not get any feedback noise. When you are ready to answer a question, make a comment, read scripture, or pray, please just unmute your microphone.

Please feel free to ask questions but to ensure that we finish each Bible Lesson, please write, and save your questions and we can go over them at the end of the lesson.)

Proverbs 2:1-5, 9-11

1 My son, if you receive my words, And treasure my commands within you, 2 So that you incline your ear to wisdom, And apply your heart to understanding; 3 Yes, if you cry out for discernment, And lift up your voice for understanding, 4 If you seek her as silver, And search for her as for hidden treasures; 5 Then you will understand the fear of the LORD, And find the knowledge of God. ... 9 Then you will understand righteousness and justice, Equity and every good path. 10 When wisdom enters your heart, And knowledge is pleasant to your soul, 11 Discretion will preserve you; Understanding will keep you,

Romans 15:4

4 For whatever things were written before were written for our learning, that we through the patience and comfort of the Scriptures might have hope.

The Book of Genesis Part 2

Lesson One – Review of the First Thirty-four Verses in Genesis

Objective of Lesson One: Review the foundation set in Genesis Part 1 study

As mentioned in the Introduction, Genesis lays the foundation for the rest of Scripture. In Genesis Part 1, we learned that the first 34 verses of Genesis are the very foundation upon which the rest of Scripture is built!

In this lesson, we will briefly review the foundational framework for the seven days seen in the first 34 verses of Genesis, along with the timelines. We will also review the significance of these verses with regards to creation, Israel, and the church, taken from the key points summary of Genesis Part 1.

Genesis 1:1,2

1 In the beginning God created the heavens and the earth. 2 The earth was without form, and void; and darkness was on the face of the deep. And the Spirit of God was hovering over the face of the waters.

In Gen. 1:2 we see creation is in a state of chaos. Do you recall if God originally created it this way, and if not, what happened?

Isaiah 45:18

18 For thus says the Lord, who created the heavens (He is the God who formed the earth and made it, He established it and did not create it a waste place [tohu], but formed it to be inhabited), "I am the Lord, and there is none else. (NASB)

There is a phrase in this passage that is underlined. What does Isaiah clearly state about God creating the earth?

God is a God of order and in Genesis 1:2 we see His creation, which was originally created in order, is now in chaos! So, again, what happened?

In Ezekiel 28:12-18 and Isaiah 14:12-15 we will read about events that occurred in Eternity Past.

Ezekiel 28:12-18

12 Son of man, take up a lamentation for the king of Tyre, and say to him, 'Thus says the Lord GOD: "You were the seal of perfection, Full of wisdom and perfect in beauty. 13 You were in Eden, the garden of God; Every precious stone was your covering: The sardius, topaz, and diamond, Beryl, onyx, and jasper, Sapphire, turquoise, and emerald with gold. The workmanship of your timbrels and pipes Was prepared for you on the day you were created. 14 "You were the anointed cherub ['Messianic angel'] who covers [rules]; I established you; You were on the holy mountain of God; You walked back and forth in the midst of fiery stones. 15 You were perfect in your ways from the day you were created, Till iniquity was found in you. 16 "By the abundance of your trading You became filled with violence within, And you sinned; Therefore I cast you as a profane thing Out of the mountain of God; And I destroyed you, O covering cherub, From the midst of the fiery stones. 17 "Your heart was lifted up because of your beauty; You corrupted your wisdom for the sake of your splendor; I cast you to

the ground, I laid you before kings, That they might gaze at you. 18 "You defiled your sanctuaries By the multitude of your iniquities, By the iniquity of your trading; Therefore I brought fire from your midst; It devoured you, And I turned you to ashes upon the earth In the sight of all who saw you."

In this passage, the King of Tyre spoken to in v. 12ff, typifies the *anointed cherub* [a 'Messianic angel'] who *covers* [rules]. This anointed cherub was Lucifer.

In what state did God create the *anointed cherub* according to v. 12?

The word *beauty* in v. 12 means *splendor, brightness*.

Where did he reside according to v. 13?

In v.13 we read "*you were in Eden the garden of God*". Precious stones are often used for attire in regality.

Eden (paradise) means place or garden of pleasure or happiness. We can read about another garden of pleasure in Rev. 2:7.

Revelation 2:7

*7 "He who has an ear, let him hear what the Spirit says to the churches. To him who overcomes I will give to eat from the tree of life, which is in the midst of the **Paradise of God.**" '*

Please take note that in both the first and last books of the Bible, and in Ezekiel 28:12-18 of eternity past, we see this garden of Eden (a garden of pleasure, paradise), as a place of rulership. Eden is where we see the man,

Adam, and the woman placed in Genesis and they were created to rule or have dominion (Gen. 1:26).

In Ezekiel 28:15 it says, “*You were perfect in your ways from the day you were created...*” until *what* was found in him?

In v.16, *mountain* in scripture denotes Kingdom so mountain of God refers to Kingdom of God.

According to v. 17, what was the cause of Lucifer’s heart being *lifted up* or exalted?

Then, in v.18 we read that Lucifer profaned and defiled *his sanctuaries*. The word sanctuary means *sacred place consecrated or holy place*.

Let’s read another passage regarding Lucifer’s rebellion in Eternity Past.

Isaiah 14:12-15

How you are fallen from heaven, O Lucifer, son of the morning! How you are cut down to the ground, You who weakened the nations! 13 For you have said in your heart: 'I will ascend into heaven, I will exalt my throne above the stars of God; I will also sit on the mount of the congregation On the farthest sides of the north; 14 I will ascend above the heights of the clouds, I will be like the Most High.' 15 Yet you shall be brought down to Sheol, To the lowest depths of the Pit.

What caused the fall of the head cherub, Lucifer, according to the Isaiah 14 passage and what do you think Lucifer was intending in these verses?

Just as in the Ezekiel passage, power and pride led to Lucifer’s downfall. A third of the angels also rebelled against God and fell.

The name *Lucifer* means, *light bearer, shining one, morning star*. After the fall, he came to be known as *Satan* which means an *opponent, adversary and arch enemy of good*.

After the fall and subsequent judgment of Lucifer in Eternity Past, the earth, and the heavens associated with it, came to be in a state of chaos; there was no order to it.

Lucifer's sanctuaries encompassed the areas over which he was created to cover or rule – the heavens that surround the earth and the earth itself. Due to his rebellion, his sanctuaries **became** defiled, and so, *the earth became without form, and became void* with no order (Gen. 1:2). And it **became** covered with raging waters and darkness which covered the earth. This chaotic state was the result of God's judgment against Lucifer's rebellion.

Then, Genesis 1:2b onward describes the restoration of that which had fallen into ruin through Satan's rebellion. As you can see, this is not a description of the original creation given in v.1, but rather a **restoration** of the ruined earth and the heavens that surround the earth through six days of work followed by a seventh day of rest.

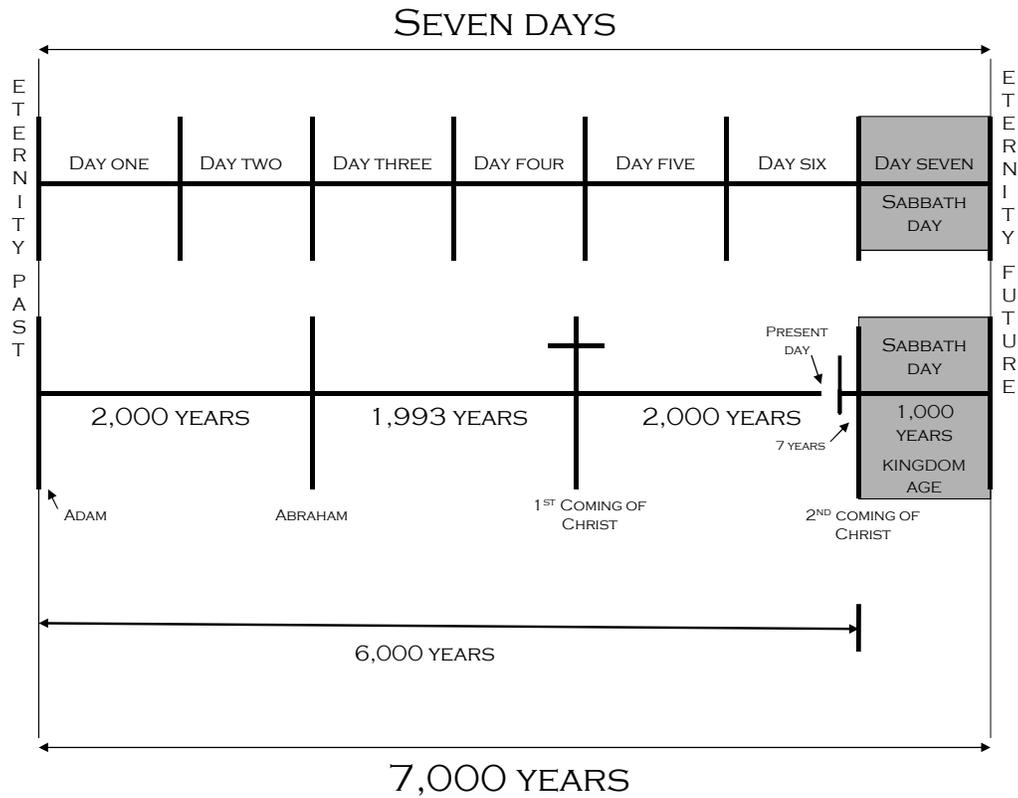
In Genesis Part 1, we saw how God began the restoration process of this ruined creation and for mankind with regards to man's original perfect creation, his fall, and God's subsequent process of man's restoration.

Before beginning this study, I would like to view the timelines on the following pages. The bulk of Scripture deals with the 7,000 years within the timelines, with little mention of events in eternity past and eternity future. And remember, from our Gen. Part 1 study, this important verse –
2Peter 3:8

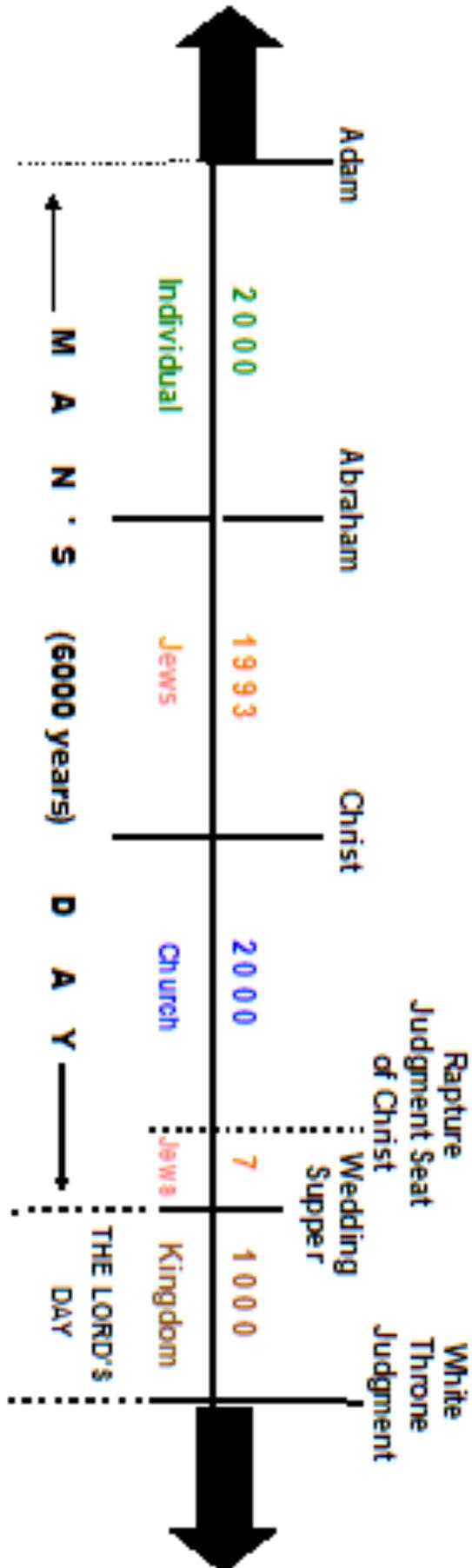
“with the Lord one day is as a thousand years, and a thousand years as one day”.

So, let's review and discuss the timelines.

Seven Day timeline



Basic Time Line



As mentioned before, the first 34 verses of Genesis set up the framework of creation, followed by ruin, then God's restoration over a six-day period, which is then followed by a seventh day of rest. This pattern of six days of restorative work followed by the seventh day of rest is seen throughout Scripture. This septenary (period of seven) pattern forms the foundational framework for the rest of Scripture.

This pattern of seven foreshadows the history of mankind also: a perfect creation, a subsequent ruin, a restoration over six 1,000-year days and a seventh 1,000-year day of rest – the Sabbath Rest out ahead, the Millennial Reign of Christ.

In the Scriptures, God divides the human race into three separate and distinct groups of individuals. The three groups are the Gentiles, the Jews and the Church. Each group exists as separate and distinct entities and each was brought into existence at different times as seen in our Basic Timeline:

- **During the first 2,000 years there were only *Gentiles* (individuals), which consisted of all mankind – the descendants of Adam. This time-period will be referred to as “the Dispensation of the Gentiles”.**
- **During the second 2,000 years, God brought forth the nation of Israel. After Abraham had been called out of the Chaldees and crossed the Euphrates, he was the first person to be called a Hebrew, which means *one who crossed over*. Abraham had a son named Isaac, and Isaac had a son named Jacob, and Jacob had twelve sons which became the twelve tribes of Israel, eventually forming the nation of Israel. (Through this nation, the seed of Abraham, would come the Redeemer of the world – Jesus Christ, and His Word – the oracles of God [Psalm 147:19,20]. Israel means *a prince who has power with God and with men*. This name foreshadows Israel's regal power in the future.) This time-period is referred to as “the Dispensation of the Jews”.**
- **Then we come to the third 2,000 years, when the Church is established. The Church is comprised of the spiritual seed of**

Abraham. This time-period is referred to as “the Dispensation of the Church.”

Galatians 3:29

29 And if you are Christ's, then you are Abraham's seed, and heirs according to the promise.

So, how does a person become Abraham's seed according to this passage?

A person becomes Abraham's seed through faith in Christ –

Act 16:31

So they said, "Believe on the Lord Jesus Christ, and you will be saved, you and your household."

Due to the fall of Adam in the Garden, resulting in a second ruin of a second perfect creation (Man), we saw that God used the same pattern of seven as He used in the first restoration, only this time it was to bring about the restoration of Man.

There are two ruined and restored creations in view — the earth (ruined twice, restored once, to be restored again yet future in the Millennial Reign of Christ), then man (presently being restored, to be completed yet future).

And an important fact to remember in studying this is that in order for God's plans and purposes for mankind to be realized, the restoration will only be realized through Abraham's Seed.

As we progress through this study (as with Part 1 of Genesis), hopefully we will see that God's purpose for creating Man is for Man to rule together with Christ in the 7th Day (also referred to as the Millennial Reign or 1,000-year Reign of Christ) in place of Satan and his fallen angels.

We will see that the first man, Adam, and his wife were disqualified from rulership because of the introduction of sin as the result of the Woman having been deceived. And in order to redeem fallen Man and the material creation ruined with him, God would work for 6 days, 6000 years, in order to fulfill His purpose for the 7th Day (2Peter 3:8). More on this later.

So, for review, let's begin at the beginning...

Genesis 1:1,2

1 In the beginning God created the heavens and the earth. 2 The earth was without form, and void; and darkness was on the face of the deep. And the Spirit of God was hovering over the face of the waters.

How does Scripture describe the earth in v.2, and do you recall what the word/phrases mean?

The phrase *without form* is the Hebrew word *tohu*. It means *confusion, emptiness, formlessness*. It describes *a place of chaos, no order, a wasteland*. The word *void* is the Hebrew word *bohu*. It means *emptiness, waste*. Darkness covered *the face of the deep*. Deep can mean deep places, abyss, seas.

And finally, what did the Spirit begin to do at the end of v. 2?

The word *hovering* in v.2 means *a vibrating, fluttering, loving and cherishing movement that hovers over*. It is from the primary root word meaning to *brood*, like a bird that hovers over and cares for its young.

The Spirit (Hebrew Word *ruwach*) of God moved over an utterly void and chaotic, ruined earth in Genesis 1:2 and, in an act of love, our nurturing God,

through His Spirit, began His restoration. Love and compassion are God's character. This restoration is an act of divine intervention.

So, God's Spirit began the restoration in creation. And just as we cannot know the exact time gap between Gen. 1:1 in eternity past and Gen. 1:2, we are also unable to say how long the earth was in a state of ruin or how long God's Spirit hovered over the waters before Day 1. Scripture is silent regarding the length of this time period. We just know that God's Spirit started "stirring up" this restorative process, even before Day 1.

Now for review, I would just like to go over the key points we studied in Genesis Part 1, regarding the restoration in creation, in Israel, and the church. (Again, this is just a brief overview of Gen. Part 1. For more detail, please review Gen. Part 1, available on the website above.)

DAY 1 - Light/Darkness

Genesis 1:2b-5

2b... And the Spirit of God was hovering over the face of the waters. 3 Then God said, "Let there be light"; and there was light. 4 And God saw the light, that it was good; and God divided the light from the darkness. 5 God called the light Day, and the darkness He called Night. So, the evening and the morning were the first day.

This day represents Israel's spiritual redemption as they trusted in the blood of their Passover Lamb.

This day represents the Christian's spiritual salvation once they put faith in Jesus.

Day 2 - Waters below/Waters above

Genesis 1:6-8

6 Then God said, "Let there be a firmament in the midst of the waters, and let it divide the waters from the waters." 7 Thus God made the firmament and divided the waters which were under the firmament from the waters which were above

the firmament; and it was so. 8 And God called the firmament Heaven. So, the evening and the morning were the second day.

On Day 2, what did God put in the midst of the waters according to v. 6?

God put the firmament in the midst of the waters. The firmament is the visible expanse or arch of the sky. It can be described as a vault of heaven supporting waters above.

God had the firmament divide the waters below from the waters above. God called the firmament Heaven.

So far, we have seen that on Day 1, God brought forth Light to shine in the darkness (the darkness which covered the face of the deep/the face of the waters) and made a division between the Light and darkness.

Then we've seen on Day 2, God dealt with the waters that covered the earth. He made a firmament, a vault or canopy, which He called Heaven, and He divided the waters, placing some of the water above the canopy, while leaving some of the waters to still cover the earth below the canopy.

God divided the waters above from the waters below.

This day represents Israel's passage through the divided waters of the Red Sea and separation from the gentile powers under the god of this age. And the gentile nation they separated from was Egypt.

This day represents the Christian's separation from wisdom below (worldly wisdom) from wisdom above, the wisdom of God. It also represents the burial of our old sin nature under the baptism water, after we are spiritually redeemed.

Day 3 – Earth and seas***Genesis 1:9-13***

9 Then God said, "Let the waters under the heavens be gathered together into one place, and let the dry land appear"; and it was so. 10 And God called the dry land Earth, and the gathering together of the waters He called Seas. And God saw that it was good. 11 Then God said, "Let the earth bring forth grass, the herb that yields seed, and the fruit tree that yields fruit according to its kind, whose seed is in itself, on the earth"; and it was so. 12 And the earth brought forth grass, the herb that yields seed according to its kind, and the tree that yields fruit, whose seed is in itself according to its kind. And God saw that it was good. 13 So the evening and the morning were the third day.

God let the waters under the heavens be gathered together into one place, and *let the dry land appear*. God called the dry land earth and the gathered waters Seas.

What God does on Day 3 sets a type of baptism and resurrection. (A type is something that points to something else. The antitype is the fulfillment of the type.)

This day represents Israel's passage through the Red Sea, their burial of their old sin nature and their resurrection up out of the waters (by divine intervention) to bear fruit.

This day represents the Christian's baptism – our death and burial of our old sin nature and being raised in resurrection power to bear spiritual fruit (Romans 6).

Spirit and soul are different words and are never used interchangeably. Our spirit **has been** saved once we trust in Christ, our soul is **in the process of being saved** as our faith matures and we trust and obey, and our body **will be saved/redeemed** and receive a regal glory covering at the Judgment Seat of Christ, **if** we end our race of faith in a way well pleasing unto the Lord.

We learned that the unredeemed soul wars against our redeemed spirit which are housed in an unredeemed body. It is a tough battle within us, but we are instructed to crucify the flesh (the unredeemed soul), take up our cross and follow Jesus.

On Day 3, after the earth came up out of the waters, it bore fruit. After Israel came up out of the Red Sea, led by the Holy Spirit in their wilderness journey, they were to bear spiritual fruit as His chosen people.

After Christians come up out of the waters (a picture of the place of death where our old sin nature is to be buried), we are raised in newness of life, and we are to bear spiritual fruit as we are led by the Holy Spirit to our Heavenly Promised Land.

Day 4 - Greater Light/Lesser Light

Genesis 1:14-19

14 Then God said, "Let there be lights in the firmament of the heavens to divide the day from the night; and let them be for signs and seasons, and for days and years; 15 "and let them be for lights in the firmament of the heavens to give light on the earth"; and it was so. 16 Then God made two great lights: the greater light to rule the day, and the lesser light to rule the night. He made the stars also. 17 God set them in the firmament of the heavens to give light on the earth, 18 and to rule over the day and over the night, and to divide the light from the darkness. And God saw that it was good. 19 So the evening and the morning were the fourth day.

The lights divided the day from the night. They were for signs and seasons, and for days and years. They were placed there in order to give light on the earth. The word *sign* points to something future. The word *seasons* means *appointed times*.

What else did God make according to v. 16?

God made two great lights: the greater light to rule the day, and the lesser light to rule the night. He made the stars also.

We see the division of light from darkness. We also see the division between day and night.

The sun, moon, and stars are just light bearers of His Glory Light as described in Gen. 1:3. These light bearers were also for seasons and for signs pointing to future events in Scripture. The greater Light (the sun) to rule the Day pictures Christ reigning in that Day, the 7th Day Sabbath Rest out ahead. We learned that the lesser light (the moon) points to the power of Satan in this current age (Eph. 6:11,12). The stars pointed to angelic rulership.

Day 5 – Birds and sea creatures

Genesis 1: 20-23

20 Then God said, "Let the waters abound with an abundance of living creatures, and let birds fly above the earth across the face of the firmament of the heavens." 21 So God created great sea creatures and every living thing that moves, with which the waters abounded, according to their kind, and every winged bird according to its kind. And God saw that it was good. 22 And God blessed them, saying, "Be fruitful and multiply, and fill the waters in the seas, and let birds multiply on the earth." 23 So the evening and the morning were the fifth day.

God let birds fly above the earth across the face of the firmament of the heavens. In v. 21, the phrase after its own kind or according to its kind means "after its own species with the species having the same ancestral gene pool."

There are creatures **below** the sea and creatures that fly **above** the earth. Again, we see a separation of things above from things below.

Day 6 – Beasts of the Earth and Man**Genesis 1: 24-31**

24 Then God said, "Let the earth bring forth the living creature according to its kind: cattle and creeping thing and beast of the earth, each according to its kind"; and it was so. 25 And God made the beast of the earth according to its kind, cattle according to its kind, and everything that creeps on the earth according to its kind. And God saw that it was good. 26 Then God said, "Let Us make man in Our image, according to Our likeness; let them have dominion over the fish of the sea, over the birds of the air, and over the cattle, over all the earth and over every creeping thing that creeps on the earth." 27 So God created man in His own image; in the image of God He created him; male and female He created them. 28 Then God blessed them, and God said to them, "Be fruitful and multiply; fill the earth and subdue it; have dominion over the fish of the sea, over the birds of the air, and over every living thing that moves on the earth." 29 And God said, "See, I have given you every herb that yields seed which is on the face of all the earth, and every tree whose fruit yields seed; to you it shall be for food. 30 "Also, to every beast of the earth, to every bird of the air, and to everything that creeps on the earth, in which there is life, I have given every green herb for food"; and it was so. 31 Then God saw everything that He had made, and indeed it was very good. So, the evening and the morning were the sixth day.

In Whose image was Man created?

Man was created in God's image. Notice the plural pronouns in v. 26 – *Us* and *Our*. God is more than one person. He is God the Father, God the Son and God the Holy Spirit – the three in one – the Trinity. As we will see in the subsequent lessons, Man was also created in three parts – spirit, soul and body.

The word *God* in Genesis 1:1 is translated from the Hebrew word '*Elohiym*' or '*Elohim*', a plural of the noun *el* which speaks of *deity* or *might(y)*. *Elohiym*, being the plural of the noun, shows that God is more than one – He is God the

Father, God the Son and God the Holy Spirit – three in one – the Trinity. Three is a number which points to divine perfection.

What was the purpose for man's creation according to verse 26?

Rulership over God's restored creation is the stated purpose of man. Adam and the woman were created to have dominion over the restored creation. The first Adam "*was a type of Him [Jesus] Who was to come.*" (Romans 5:14b.)

Just as the woman was removed from the **side** of the body of Adam, so will the Bride of Christ be removed from the Body of Christ (the Church) at the Judgment Seat of Christ. The Bride will be comprised of the overcomers who have been washed in the water of His Word and cleansed by His blood. The water and the blood flowed supernaturally from Jesus' dead body after His **side** was pierced.

Day 7 - Rest

Genesis 2:1-3

1 Thus the heavens and the earth, and all the host of them, were finished. 2 And on the seventh day God ended His work which He had done, and He rested on the seventh day from all His work which He had done. 3 Then God blessed the seventh day and sanctified it, because in it He rested from all His work which God had created and made.

God ended His work which He had done, and He rested on the Seventh day from all His work which He had done.

According to v. 3, what did God do to the Seventh Day to show that it was special, unique?

God blessed the Seventh day and sanctified it, because in it He rested from all His work which God had created and made.

To *bless* can mean to *adore*, to *kneel*, to *praise*. The Seventh Day was to be praised and adored. It was also sanctified by the Lord. *Sanctify* means to *be set apart, holy, consecrated*.

God's pattern of six days of restorative work followed by the Seventh Day of rest is seen throughout scripture and forms the foundational framework.

2 Peter 3: 8

But, beloved, do not forget this one thing, that with the Lord one day is as a thousand years, and a thousand years as one day.

This pattern foreshadows the history of man also: creation, a subsequent ruin, a restoration over six 1,000-year days and a seventh 1,000-year day of rest, the Sabbath Rest out ahead, the Millennial Reign of Christ!

As a preview of things to come, we will see that God's purpose for creating Man is for a Man and a Woman to rule the earth together in a marriage relationship in the 7th Day, in the place of Satan and his angels. It is very important to see this change in rulership out ahead and God's purpose for creating man in the first place!

The first man, Adam, and his wife were disqualified from rulership because of the introduction of sin, as a result of the Woman having been deceived by the serpent. And in order to redeem fallen Man and the material creation ruined with him, God would work for 6 days, 6000 years, in order to fulfill His purpose for the 7th Day.

Following the flood of Noah, as God works within the 6,000 years, 6 days, to fulfill His purpose, He chose to work through the lineage of Shem, the only one of Noah's sons described as having a God – **Gen. 9:26** *And he said: "Blessed be the Lord, The God of Shem..."*

It would therefore follow that only those from the lineage of Shem would be the ones God would work through as well. Shem had God, but his brothers didn't. The brothers' access to God and His spiritual blessings could only come through Shem. And this principle set in place following God's judgment upon the inhabitants of the earth cannot be altered.

Through Shem's lineage would come one man, Abraham, to whom the promises concerning God's purpose for the 7th Day were given –

Genesis 22:15

“Then the Angel of the Lord called to Abraham a second time out of heaven, 16 and said: “By Myself I have sworn, says the Lord, because you have done this thing, and have not withheld your son, your only son— 17 blessing I will bless you, and multiplying I will multiply your descendants as the stars of the heaven and as the sand which is on the seashore; and your descendants shall possess the gate of their enemies. 18 In your seed all the nations of the earth shall be blessed, because you have obeyed My voice.”

The descendants of Abraham who *‘shall possess the gate of their enemies’* in fulfillment of God's purpose, are to come through the son of promise, Abraham's son Isaac, and through Isaac's son Jacob, and his 12 sons. And it was in Abraham's grandson, Jacob that God brought about a new creation, the nation of Israel, a nation adopted as God's firstborn son, a nation that would also be His wife; a nation that would be completely separate from the kingdom of Satan and the nations under his control, in order to rule those nations within a theocracy.

Unfortunately, Old Testament Scripture states that Israel continued to commit spiritual harlotry with the pagan worshipping, gentile nations. Remember, they were supposed to overthrow, and be separate from, these gentile nations. And their disobedience eventually provoked God to divorce His harlot wife and end the theocracy. But at the end of the tribulation, God will restore Israel after they repent. God will take Israel back as His wife and Israel will be brought into the land under a theocracy. God's promises to Abraham will be realized in a time yet future because **God is faithful.**

One cannot emphasize enough how valuable Israel is in God's eyes and that the restoration of man and creation can only be realized through Abraham's seed.

And remember, that God always declares the end from the beginning, in the Book of Beginnings, Genesis.

One other important principle to remember is that God deals with three separate and distinct groups of individuals within their specific dispensational time period of ~ 2,000 years:

- **Gentiles**
- **Jews/Israel**
- **Christians/Church**

In reviewing the timeline, we saw that after 2,000 years (2 days) for each group, all three groups will be brought into the third day which also corresponds to the Millennial Reign of Christ, the Seventh Day Sabbath Rest out ahead.

This Seventh Day (which is the Third Day respectively for each of the dispensations), is what the whole of Scripture moves toward! It is the 1,000-year Reign of Christ, the Day of Rest when God will have completed His work of restoring that which was lost in the Garden through the sin of Adam and the woman. It is also when rulership over and upon the earth will change. Satan and his demonic angels currently ruling from the heavens over the earth will be replaced by Christ and His Bride.

God's plans and purposes for mankind can only be realized through the physical seed of Abraham (the Jews) and spiritual seed of Abraham (the Christians).

Due to Israel's years of disobedience, after they crucified their King Jesus 2,000 years ago, the offer of rulership from the heavenly portion of Christ's Millennial Kingdom was taken from Israel and given to "*a new nation that would bear the fruits thereof...*" (the church). Israel is however, still in a position to rule on the earthly portion of Christ's Kingdom, after their repentance at the end of the tribulation.

We reviewed the number seven in scripture regarding Israel and the church.

Israel was to follow the Sabbatical Year. After six years, on the seventh year they were to let the land rest and lie fallow. Farming and debt payment were released for the year.

After seven sabbatical years had passed (seven 7's or $7 \times 7 = 49$ years), Israel was to observe the 50th year, called the Jubilee Year. During this year, the land was to remain at rest, all hired workers were set free, slaves were released, and the land was to be returned to its original owner, thus preserving the tribes of Israel and their allotted inheritance of the land.

In Gen. Part 1, we saw that the Jubilee Year portrays a future time when Israel will be restored by their Messiah Jesus and brought into their land in the Messianic Kingdom. They will no longer be under the oppression of the gentile nations, and they will be set free.

We compared the Jubilee Year, which follows seven 7-year periods, with Daniel's Seventy weeks.

Daniel 9:24-26

24 "Seventy weeks are determined For your people and for your holy city, To finish the transgression, To make an end of sins, To make reconciliation for iniquity, To bring in everlasting righteousness, To seal up vision and prophecy, And to anoint the Most Holy.

The Book of Daniel deals with the nation of Israel. **A week = 7 years** in Daniel's prophecy given in Daniel 9. Seventy weeks are determined for Israel to finish or make an end to their transgressions and seventy weeks = 70×7 years = $7 \times 7 \times 10 =$ **490 years total.**

Here we see that as with the Jubilee Year, we have 7×7 , except that it is multiplied by ten. Ten is the number of completion, so 490 years represents a complete period of time after which Israel will be forgiven of their sins (debt of sin) and brought into their land in their final Jubilee Year. This will occur in the 1,000-year Messianic era, the Sabbath Rest out ahead.

And finally, we reviewed the Seventh Day regarding the church.

Hebrews 4:1-2, 9

1 Therefore, since a promise remains of entering His rest, let us fear lest any of you seem to have come short of it. 2 For indeed the gospel was preached to us as well as to them; but the word which they [Israel] heard did not profit them, not being mixed with faith in those who heard it. ... 9 There remains therefore a rest for the people of God.

This passage provides a clear warning for the Christian. This refers to the time when we will cease from our works in this present age just as God will have ceased from His on the 7th Day. Presently, we are to be diligent to enter that rest so that we do not fall from entering Christ's Kingdom as His Bride, His **joint heir**.

We learned that after becoming a Christian through faith in Christ (the gift), we are to strive to receive the prize, the goal of our faith, **the salvation of our souls**. And the prize is receiving the imperishable crown of rulership in Christ's heavenly Kingdom on the Seventh Day.

1Corinthians 9:24-27

24 Do you not know that those who run in a race all run, but one receives the prize? Run in such a way that you may obtain it. 25 And everyone who competes for the prize is temperate in all things. Now they do it to obtain a perishable crown, but we for an imperishable crown. 26 Therefore I run thus: not with uncertainty. Thus I fight: not as one who beats the air. 27 But I discipline my body and bring it into subjection, lest, when I have preached to others, I myself should become disqualified [disqualified from ruling with Christ in His Kingdom].

We reviewed the spiritual significance of the parable of the ten virgins.

In Revelation chapters 1-3, we examined Jesus as the Judge, judging all seven churches (all Christians) throughout this church dispensation. And what He is judging are the works of the Christian ("*I know your works...*").

We reviewed His encouraging promises, His words of commendation to the overcomers of the church, those who have received the goal of their faith, the salvation of their souls.

1Peter 1:3-9

*3 Blessed be the God and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, who according to His abundant mercy has begotten us again to a living hope through the resurrection of Jesus Christ from the dead, 4 to an inheritance incorruptible and undefiled and that does not fade away, reserved in heaven for you, 5 who are kept by the power of God through faith for salvation ready to be revealed in the last time. 6 In this you greatly rejoice, though now for a little while, if need be, you have been grieved by various trials, 7 that the genuineness of your faith, being much more precious than gold that perishes, though it is tested by fire, may be found to praise, honor, and glory at the revelation of Jesus Christ, 8 whom having not seen you love. Though now you do not see Him, yet believing, you rejoice with joy inexpressible and full of glory, 9 receiving the end of your faith--**the salvation of your souls.***

James 1:21

*21 Therefore lay aside all filthiness and overflow of wickedness, and receive with meekness the implanted word, which is able **to save your souls.***

Hebrews 10:38-39

*38 Now the just shall live by faith; But if anyone draws back, My soul has no pleasure in him." 39 But we are not of those who draw back to perdition, but of those who believe **to the saving of the soul.***

Matthew 6:25, 33

25 "Therefore I say to you, do not worry about your life, what you will eat or what you will drink; nor about your body, what you will put on. Is not life more

*than food and the body more than clothing? ... 33 "But **seek first the kingdom of God** and His righteousness, and all these things shall be added to you.*

And to Israel –

Isaiah 61:10

10 I will greatly rejoice in the LORD, My soul shall be joyful in my God; For He has clothed me with the garments of salvation, He has covered me with the robe of righteousness, As a bridegroom decks himself with ornaments, And as a bride adorns herself with her jewels.

And we reviewed the verses showing how God's restoration of creation came into being.

Day 1 – v.3 Then **God said**, "Let there be light"; and there was light.

Day 2 – v.6 Then **God said**, "Let there be a firmament in the midst of the waters, and let it divide the waters from the waters."

Day 3 – v.9 Then **God said**, "Let the waters under the heavens be gathered together into one place, and let the dry land appear"; and it was so.

Day 4 – v.14 Then **God said**, "Let there be lights in the firmament of the heavens to divide the day from the night; and let them be for signs and seasons, and for days and years;

Day 5 – v.20 Then **God said**, "Let the waters abound with an abundance of living creatures, and let birds fly above the earth across the face of the firmament of the heavens."

Day 6 – v.24 Then **God said**, "Let the earth bring forth the living creature according to its kind: cattle and creeping thing and beast of the earth, each according to its kind"; and it was so. Then God said, "Let Us make man in Our image, according to Our likeness; let them have dominion.

Do you see a pattern here?

God said and it was. It is only through the Word of God that restoration of a ruined creation was made possible. As we will see in subsequent lessons, God's Word restores fallen Man also.

Hebrew 11:3

*3 By faith we understand that the worlds were framed [lit. restored, mended], by the **word of God**, so that the things which are seen were not made of things which are visible.*

I hope you found this brief, encapsulated review of Genesis Part 1 helpful.

We are now ready to dive into the passages beyond the first 34 verses of Genesis.

In the Scripture, the Lord often lays out the framework first and then He expands on that framework in subsequent Scripture. This is what we will see as we move forward in Genesis Part 2.

That's it for today. I hope you will enjoy Part 2 of Genesis and that you will find it helpful in understanding God's purpose for you in this age, and in the age to come.

Psalm 33:4-6

4 For the word of the LORD is right, And all His work is done in truth. 5 He loves righteousness and justice; The earth is full of the goodness of the LORD. 6 By the word of the LORD the heavens were made, And all the host of them by the breath of His mouth.

The Book of Genesis Part 2

Lesson Two – Rain; God’s Spirit and the Creation of Man

Objective of Lesson Two: Examining the significance of rain; God’s Spirit and the creation of man.

Last lesson we reviewed the first thirty-four verses of Genesis. We learned that God’s pattern of six days of restorative work followed by the Seventh Day of rest is seen throughout scripture and forms the foundational framework.

2 Peter 3: 8

But, beloved, do not forget this one thing, that with the Lord one day is as a thousand years, and a thousand years as one day.

This pattern foreshadows the history of man also: creation, a subsequent ruin, a restoration over six 1,000-year days and a seventh 1,000-year day of rest, the Sabbath Rest out ahead, the Millennial Reign of Christ!

All Scripture moves toward a seventh day, a seventh millennium, not toward the eternal ages beyond. (We can see this in the types, signs, and the prophetic calendar seen in the Jewish Feasts.)

God has established the foundational framework in the first 34 verses of Genesis. As we move forward in our study of Genesis, you will see that the Lord begins to fill in more details regarding this framework. This is often the way the Lord lays out His Scripture. He presents the framework and then in subsequent passages, He expands on that framework. (We can see a good example of this in the Book of Revelation.)

Genesis 2:1-7

1 Thus the heavens and the earth, and all the host of them, were finished. 2 And on the seventh day God ended His work which He had done, and He rested on the seventh day from all His work which He had done. 3 Then God blessed the seventh day and sanctified it, because in it He rested from all His work which God had created and made. 4 This is the history [generations] of the heavens and the earth when they were created, in the day that the LORD God made the earth and the heavens, 5 before any plant of the field was in the earth and before any herb of the field had grown. For the LORD God had not caused it to rain on the earth, and there was no man to till the ground; 6 but a mist [vapor] went up from the earth and watered the whole face of the ground. 7 And the LORD God formed man of the dust of the ground, and breathed into his nostrils the breath of life; and man became a living being.

According to v. 4, the *history [generations] of the heavens and the earth* is given in the previous verses of Genesis. Why was there *no plant of the field and herb to grow* according to the second half of v.5?

There was no rain on the earth, and there was no man to till the ground.

Meteorological conditions prior to the flood of Noah

Prior to the time of the Flood during Noah's day, during the antediluvian period, meteorological conditions, as we know them today, did not exist. During this period, a vapor canopy enveloped the earth, above the atmosphere. Temperatures would have been fairly uniform throughout the earth with no polar ice caps. (Perhaps this explains why remains of tropical vegetation and animals are found enclosed in the ice of the Arctic regions.)

Also, during this time, with harmful rays of the sun evidently being filtered out by the vapor canopy above the atmosphere man lived for hundreds of years and could beget children during at least much of this time (*e.g.*, Noah begets sons at the age of five hundred in Gen. 5:32). The average lifespan of man during this time, covering the ten generations from Adam to Noah (excluding Enoch, who was translated, taken up by God), was 912 years!

(The uniform canopy of vapor may have been a combination of liquid water along with a deep layer of saturated vapor during the antediluvian world before the flood of Noah. This canopy removed UV wavelengths from the light reaching the surface of the earth.

Since a more uniform, tropical, climate existed before the flood of Noah, there were no weather systems of nature seen today (high- and low-pressure areas, thunderstorms, frontal zones, etc.).

Much of the energy distribution must have occurred in the water substance above the atmosphere with most of the radiation reaching the earth in the infrared range from the water substance. There would, then, have been only weak temperature gradients, supporting relatively weak flow on the surface of the earth.

The only reason we have weather is to compensate for the uneven distribution of solar radiation on the earth. With the large volume of water substance above the earth before the Flood, much of the solar imbalance likely was removed by the water layer.

For further discussion on this fascinating topic, please read *Meteorology and Hydrology Conditions in Pre-Flood Days, Conditions Today* in the appendix of *Seven, Ten Generations* by Arlen Chitwood.)

After the flood, the protective vapor canopy had been removed. This allowed the sun's rays to come through unfiltered and man's longevity was immediately shortened, almost cut in half! And the life span of man continued to decline as time went on.

(Also, after the flood, mountain ranges were formed, and canyons were carved out. This can explain why sea fossils are found in locations like the Andes Mountains and Mt. Everest.)

We are going to see that God will restore *all things* in Christ's Millennial Reign, as promised in Acts 3:19-21 –

Act 3:19-21

*19 "Repent therefore and be converted, that your sins may be blotted out, so that times of refreshing may come from the presence of the Lord, 20 "and that He may send Jesus Christ, who was preached to you before, 21 "whom heaven must receive until the times of **restoration of all things**, which God has spoken by the mouth of all His holy prophets since the world began.*

During Christ's Millennial Reign, the canopy of vapor which once existed above the atmosphere will again be established and Edenic conditions will once again exist. And with the meteorologic changes that will be restored, the long, life span of man will again exist!

(In fact, man in that coming day will live for the duration of the Millennium, in a natural body, moving right on into the eternal ages in this same type of body. When Adam was created, he was created in *an undying, natural body, designed and created by God to exist forever.* And man is going to one day be brought back into that state.)

Job 38:1, 4, 24-28, 31, 34, 36

1 Then the LORD answered Job out of the whirlwind, and said: ... 4 "Where were you when I laid the foundations of the earth? Tell Me, if you have understanding. ... 24 By what way is light diffused, Or the east wind scattered over the earth? 25 "Who has divided a channel for the overflowing water, Or a path for the thunderbolt, 26 To cause it to rain on a land where there is no one, A wilderness in which there is no man; 27 To satisfy the desolate waste, And cause to spring forth the growth of tender grass? 28 Has the rain a father? Or who has begotten the drops of dew? ... 31 "Can you bind the cluster of the Pleiades, Or loose the belt

of Orion? ... 34 "Can you lift up your voice to the clouds, That an abundance of water may cover you? ... 36 Who has put wisdom in the mind? Or who has given understanding to the heart?

In this passage the Lord reveals His omnipotence to Job. What does God say about Himself in vv. 26,27?

It is God who causes it to rain on a land where there is no one, A wilderness in which there is no man; 27 To satisfy the desolate waste, And cause to spring forth the growth of tender grass.

And we can see that rain, water upon a dry land (a wilderness) leads to blessings and fruitfulness spiritually.

Psalm 107:31-38, 43

*31 Oh, that men would give thanks to the LORD for His goodness, And for His wonderful works to the children of men! 32 Let them exalt Him also in the assembly of the people, And praise Him in the company of the elders. 33 He turns rivers into a wilderness, And the watersprings into dry ground; 34 A fruitful land into barrenness, For the wickedness of those who dwell in it. 35 He turns a wilderness into pools of water, And dry land into watersprings. 36 There He makes the hungry dwell, That they may establish a city for a dwelling place, 37 And sow fields and plant vineyards, **That they may yield a fruitful harvest.** 38 He also blesses them, and they multiply greatly; And He does not let their cattle decrease. ... 43 Whoever is wise will observe these things, And they will understand the lovingkindness of the LORD.*

Please read the three passages below.

Psalm 63:1

1 A Psalm of David when he was in the wilderness of Judah. O God, You are my God; Early will I seek You; My soul thirsts for You; My flesh longs for You In a dry and thirsty land Where there is no water.

Ephesians 5:25-26

*25 Husbands, love your wives, just as Christ also loved the church and gave Himself for her, 26 that He might sanctify and cleanse her with the **washing of water by the word,***

John 4:10, 14

*10 Jesus answered and said to her, "If you knew the gift of God, and who it is who says to you, 'Give Me a drink,' you would have asked Him, and He would have given you living water." ... 14 "but **whoever drinks of the water that I shall give him will never thirst. But the water that I shall give him will become in him a fountain of water springing up into everlasting life.**"*

What was David seeking in the Psalm passage and what exactly is the water according to the Ephesians and John passages?

Water in Scripture points to the Word of God and Jesus is the incarnate Word of God. May we, like David, have a soul that thirsts for the Lord's Word, while we journey through this dry and thirsty wilderness. And may the only source used to quench our spiritual thirst be the Word of God. Only then will man bear spiritual fruit and receive spiritual blessing –

Revelation 21:6-7

6 And He said to me, "It is done! I am the Alpha and the Omega, the Beginning and the End. I will give of the fountain of the water of life freely to him who

thirsts. 7 "He who overcomes shall inherit all things, and I will be his God and he shall be My son.

In this study, we will continue to examine passages in Genesis and their application with Israel and the church.

In Scripture, rain is often shown as a positive event that brings forth fruit and new birth. Lack of rain may be seen as judgment.

Isaiah 5:1-2, 5-7, 20-21, 24

1 Now let me sing to my Well-beloved A song of my Beloved regarding His vineyard: My Well-beloved has a vineyard On a very fruitful hill. 2 He dug it up and cleared out its stones, And planted it with the choicest vine. He built a tower in its midst, And also made a winepress in it; So He expected it to bring forth good grapes, But it brought forth wild grapes. ... 5 And now, please let Me tell you what I will do to My vineyard: I will take away its hedge, and it shall be burned; And break down its wall, and it shall be trampled down. 6 I will lay it waste; It shall not be pruned or dug, But there shall come up briars and thorns. I will also command the clouds That they rain no rain on it." 7 For the vineyard of the LORD of hosts is the house of Israel, And the men of Judah are His pleasant plant. He looked for justice, but behold, oppression; For righteousness, but behold, a cry for help. ... 20 Woe to those who call evil good, and good evil; Who put darkness for light, and light for darkness; Who put bitter for sweet, and sweet for bitter! 21 Woe to those who are wise in their own eyes, And prudent in their own sight! ... 24 Therefore, as the fire devours the stubble, And the flame consumes the chaff, So their root will be as rottenness, And their blossom will ascend like dust; Because they have rejected the law of the LORD of hosts, And despised the word of the Holy One of Israel.

In this passage, why does God reprimand Israel?

God reprimanded Israel for their disobedience and unfaithfulness, *who call evil good, and good evil; Who put darkness for light, and light for darkness.* In v.24 God specifically states that they are judged because they *have rejected the law of the LORD of hosts, And despised the word of the Holy One of Israel.*

The enemy of God, Satan, has led many of God's people astray by using this same tactic, questioning, and rejecting God's Word, the Bible!

What judgment against Israel is mentioned and what is the result of that judgment (vv.5,6,24)?

1Kings 16:30-33

30 Now Ahab [King of Israel] the son of Omri did evil in the sight of the LORD, more than all who were before him. 31 And it came to pass, as though it had been a trivial thing for him to walk in the sins of Jeroboam the son of Nebat, that he took as wife Jezebel the daughter of Ethbaal, king of the Sidonians; and he went and served Baal and worshiped him. 32 Then he set up an altar for Baal in the temple of Baal, which he had built in Samaria. 33 And Ahab made a wooden image. Ahab did more to provoke the LORD God of Israel to anger than all the kings of Israel who were before him.

1Kings 17:1

1 And Elijah the Tishbite, of the inhabitants of Gilead, said to Ahab, "As the LORD God of Israel lives, before whom I stand, there shall not be dew nor rain these years, except at my word."

Due to Ahab and Israel's spiritual harlotry with the god of Baal, what judgment did God send on the land?

In these passages, a drought with no rain, is an act of judgment for disregarding and despising God's Word. Instead of faithful obedience unto the Lord, they rebelled and drifted away from the Lord, committing idolatry.

Now let's finish our discussion of rain with a passage revealing rain and snow as a blessing from the Lord.

Isaiah 55:9-13

9 "For as the heavens are higher than the earth, So are My ways higher than your ways, And My thoughts than your thoughts. 10 "For as the rain comes down, and the snow from heaven, And do not return there, But water the earth, And make it bring forth and bud, That it may give seed to the sower And bread to the eater, 11 So shall My word be that goes forth from My mouth; It shall not return to Me void, But it shall accomplish what I please, And it shall prosper in the thing for which I sent it. 12 "For you shall go out with joy, And be led out with peace; The mountains and the hills Shall break forth into singing before you, And all the trees of the field shall clap their hands. 13 Instead of the thorn shall come up the cypress tree, And instead of the brier shall come up the myrtle tree; And it shall be to the LORD for a name, For an everlasting sign that shall not be cut off."

In this passage, what is the rain and the snow, which waters the earth, and makes it bring forth the bud, compared to?

In this passage, rain is viewed as a positive event. And the rain and snow, which comes down and waters the earth, is compared to the Word of God,

which shall not return void. *And it shall prosper in the thing for which God sent it.*

The rain, the Word of God, will bear fruit. God will replace the thorns and brier (which are part of the curse on the land after the fall and God's judgment against Israel) with cypress trees and the myrtle tree. And it is God's Word which will bring about restoration for man and the land.

This passage speaks of a time yet future, when Israel will be saved at the end of the tribulation. They will be brought into the land to bear fruit by being God's witnesses to the Gentiles in the Messianic era.

An interesting fact is that the cypress tree is a tree of great endurance and hardness. It has firm, tenacious roots which allows the tree to grow tall and spread out, even in standing water. The wood of the cypress tree was used to build Solomon's temple, as instructed by God. Solomon's reign is also a type of the Millennial reign of Christ –

1Kings 6:14-16

*14 So Solomon built the temple and finished it. 15 And he built the inside walls of the temple with cedar boards; from the floor of the temple to the ceiling he paneled the inside with wood; **and he covered the floor of the temple with planks of cypress.** 16 Then he built the twenty-cubit room at the rear of the temple, from floor to ceiling, with cedar boards; he built it inside as the inner sanctuary, as the Most Holy Place.*

The myrtle tree appears in Isa. 41:19; 55:13, Neh. 8:15; Zech. 1:8, 10-11. The branches of the myrtle tree are used by Jews during the Feast of Tabernacles. This Jewish feast prophetically points to the Sabbath Rest out ahead for Israel – the Messianic era –

Nehemiah 8:14-15

14 And they found written in the Law, which the LORD had commanded by Moses, that the children of Israel should dwell in booths during the feast of the seventh month, 15 and that they should announce and proclaim in all their cities and in Jerusalem, saying, "Go out to the mountain, and bring olive branches,

branches of oil trees, myrtle branches, palm branches, and branches of leafy trees, to make booths, as it is written."

Esther is a book in the Old Testament picturing God's deliverance of Israel from the antichrist during the tribulation period. Esther's Hebrew name, *Hadassah* means myrtle tree –

Esther 2:7

7 And Mordecai had brought up Hadassah, that is, Esther, his uncle's daughter, for she had neither father nor mother. The young woman was lovely and beautiful. When her father and mother died, Mordecai took her as his own daughter.

In the New Testament, addressing the church, we can also read that rain is needed for fruit bearing (spiritual fruit) and for receiving God's spiritual blessing.

Hebrews 6:7

7 For the earth which drinks in the rain that often comes upon it, and bears herbs useful for those by whom it is cultivated, receives blessing from God.

It is the water provided by the Lord, the Word of God, that will allow the overcoming Christian to take the water of life freely, in the Millennial Reign of Christ –

Revelation 22:12, 14, 17

12 "And behold, I am coming quickly, and My reward is with Me, to give to every one according to his work. ... 14 Blessed are those who do His commandments, that they may have the right to the tree of life, and may enter through the gates into the city. ... 17 And the Spirit and the bride say, "Come!" And let him who hears say, "Come!" And let him who thirsts come. Whoever desires, let him take the water of life freely.

And we can see the water of life with the Lord's encounter with the Samaritan woman at the well.

The Samaritans were considered neither Jew or Greek and they were considered unclean by the Jews.

Due to years of disobedience, the Northern tribe of Israel was taken captive in 722 B.C. God had allowed the Assyrians to come down and take His people captive, removing a large segment of them from the land, and transporting them into Gentile lands controlled by the Assyrians (II Kings 17:4-23).

Then, following this time, the king of Assyria moved Gentiles from the Assyrian kingdom into the conquered land to occupy the land and control the people that had been left in the land (II Kings 17:24). And intermarriages between these Gentile immigrants and the Hebrews, over time, eventually resulted in a mixed racial state of the Samaritans, something that continued to exist throughout the ensuing centuries, extending into the first century A.D. at the time of Christ's first coming.

The Samaritans then had a defiled and perverted Hebrew faith, mixed with paganism introduced by the Assyrians. And they were considered unclean by the Jews. They were neither Jew nor Gentile and so they represent the *one new man in Christ*, the Christian (Eph. 2:11-18).

John 4:7, 9-10, 13-14

7 A woman of Samaria came to draw water. Jesus said to her, "Give Me a drink." ... 9 Then the woman of Samaria said to Him, "How is it that You, being a Jew, ask a drink from me, a Samaritan woman?" For Jews have no dealings with Samaritans. 10 Jesus answered and said to her, "If you knew the gift of God, and who it is who says to you, 'Give Me a drink,' you would have asked Him, and He would have given you living water." ... 13 Jesus answered and said to her, "Whoever drinks of this water will thirst again, 14 "but whoever drinks of the water that I shall give him will never thirst. But the water that I shall give him will become in him a fountain of water springing up into everlasting life."

In v. 13, how does Jesus describe the water that He gives?

Returning to Genesis 2:6, how was the ground watered before it was watered by rain?

How did God form man according to v.7? What was he formed from and how did he become a living being?

Man was formed or fashioned from the dust of the **restored** earth. The Hebrew word for ground is *adama*, from which we get the name Adam. After fashioning the man from the dust, God breathed into his nostril the breath or **Spirit** of God. This is the Hebrew word **neshamah**.

Can you recall another passage in the New Testament where God's Spirit gives life?

All Scripture is God breathed, God's inspiration.

2 Timothy 3:16-17

16 All Scripture is given by inspiration of God, and is profitable for doctrine, for reproof, for correction, for instruction in righteousness, 17 that the man of God may be complete, thoroughly equipped for every good work.

The phrase *inspiration of God* means *God breathed, inspired by God*. It comes from the Greek word *theopneustos* with *theo* meaning God and *pneustos* meaning *breathe*.

God's Word then is what gives us spiritual life and life in the age to come. It is our only source of truth. It is our spiritual nourishment, and it equips us to be complete, perfect. And according to the gospel of John, in John 1 we read that Jesus is the Word made flesh!

So, the Lord God formed man from the dust of the earth and breathed into his nostrils the breath of life and the man became a living being. Remember, in Genesis Part 1 we learned that regarding the rest of creation, God had simply spoken things into existence (e.g., Gen. 1:3,14,20,24) – “*And God said.*” In God's Word alone (which is God breathed), can we have life.

John 6:63

63 "It is the Spirit who gives life; the flesh profits nothing. The words that I speak to you are spirit, and they are life.

From the above verse, what is referred to as *spirit* and what gives *life*?

In Genesis Part 1, we read that the Spirit (Hebrew Word *ruwach*) of God moved over an utterly void and chaotic, ruined earth in Genesis 1:2 and, in an act of love, our nurturing God, through His Spirit, began His restoration in creation by His divine intervention.

God's Spirit started "stirring up" this restorative process even before Day 1.

Now let's review some passages in the Old Testament regarding Israel with respect to God's Spirit and life.

In Gen. Part 1, we learned that for the nation of Israel, their redemption in Egypt occurred on the night of Passover through the death and shed blood of the Passover lambs. This was Israel's deliverance from darkness to Light, as foreshadowed in Day 1 in Genesis. It was their spiritual redemption. After their spiritual redemption, God instructed the Israelites to leave Egypt. God took them to the Red Sea and there He parted the waters, allowing the Israelites to walk on dry ground.

Exodus 14:21-22

*21 Then Moses stretched out his hand over the sea; and the LORD caused the sea to go back by a strong east **wind [ruwach]** all that night, and made the sea into dry land, and the waters were divided. 22 So the children of Israel went into the midst of the sea on the dry ground, and the waters were a wall to them on their right hand and on their left.*

What did God use to cause *the sea to go back* thereby allowing them to walk on a dry seabed?

God used a *strong east **wind***. The word *wind* is the same word used in Genesis 1:2 for *Spirit*. The same Hebrew word for *wind* is used in Genesis 8:1 after the flood in Noah's day. The Hebrew word **ruwach** is often used to describe a restorative act of God's Spirit.

And then we can read how God will yet restore Israel in the future –

Ezekiel 36:24-28

24 "For I will take you from among the nations, gather you out of all countries, and bring you into your own land. 25 "Then I will sprinkle clean water on you, and you shall be clean; I will cleanse you from all your filthiness and from all

*your idols. 26 "I will give you a new heart and put a new spirit within you; I will take the heart of stone out of your flesh and give you a heart of flesh. 27 "I will put My **Spirit [ruwach]** within you and cause you to walk in My statutes, and you will keep My judgments and do them. 28 "Then you shall dwell in the land that I gave to your fathers; you shall be My people, and I will be your God.*

This passage speaks of a time yet future, when the nation of Israel will be saved at the end of the tribulation period. What will God *put* within Israel's heart to restore them, according to vv. 26,27?

It is God's divine intervention, His Spirit, that will breathe life into Israel, placing *a new spirit* within them.

As mentioned earlier, the Hebrew word for *Spirit* is *ruwach*. In the New Testament, the Greek word used for *spirit* is, *breath, wind* or *pneuma*. (The medical term pneumonia originated from this root word for breath, pneuma.)

Now let's look at some New Testament passages regarding the Church and restoration by the *Spirit, Wind, and Breath*.

John 3: 8

*8 The **wind** blows where it wishes, and you hear the sound of it, but cannot tell where it comes from and where it goes. So is everyone who is born of the **Spirit**."*

The word *wind* and *Spirit* are the same Greek word, *pneuma*, in the John passage given above.

This passage shows God's restorative work being done by His Spirit as we are brought forth from above.

(And remember, in **2 Timothy 3:16-17**, we read that *all Scripture* is God breathed, God inspired.)

What parallels can we draw from Genesis 1:2b with ourselves prior to our acceptance of Christ for our eternal salvation?

Before we came to Christ, we were in darkness, separated from God because of our sinful nature. In a real sense, the Holy Spirit began the process of our salvation by *hovering over us*. As the Word of God (which is God inspired by His Breath) is proclaimed, we trusted in His provision for salvation, and we “believed on the Lord Jesus Christ”. Just as God breathed His breath into Adam, and at that point Adam became a living being, so too did God breathe His Breath, the Holy Spirit, into us, and at that point we became alive spiritually.

The Bible is a supernatural book *because* it is God breathed; it is alive! The Spirit transforms our human mind. Just as in Genesis 1:2, we saw the Spirit beginning the restoration process of the ruined creation, so does His Spirit begin His restoration process within us, who prior to being saved were dead spiritually in trespasses and sin.

So, we can see that it is the breath of God, the Holy Spirit, that begins the restoration process. But remember, this is where God *begins* His restorative process. He doesn't stop there, as there is *more* to this process.

Genesis 2:8-9

8 The LORD God planted a garden eastward in Eden, and there He put the man whom He had formed. 9 And out of the ground the LORD God made every tree grow that is pleasant to the sight and good for food. The tree of life was also in the midst of the garden, and the tree of the knowledge of good and evil.

Where did the Lord *put the man whom He had formed*?

Eden means *pleasure*. As mentioned earlier, when Adam was created, he was created in an undying, natural body, designed and created by God to exist forever.

(And man is going to one day be brought back into that state.)

So, Adam and the Woman were created eternal beings and did not therefore need to eat from the tree of life for physical life.

What might the tree of life provide then? Do you recall why God created man?

Genesis 1:26

26 Then God said, "Let Us make man in Our image, according to Our likeness; let them have dominion over the fish of the sea, over the birds of the air, and over the cattle, over all the earth and over every creeping thing that creeps on the earth."

In Gen. 1:26 we read that God created man to have dominion (rule) over His restored creation. The plural word *Us* in Gen. 1:26 means that God is more than one, God is the three in one, the Trinity.

2Corinthians 13:14

*The grace of the Lord **Jesus Christ**, and the love of **God**, and the communion of the **Holy Spirit** be with you all. Amen.*

Luke 3:22

*And the **Holy Spirit** descended in bodily form like a dove upon **Him**, and **a voice came from heaven which said, "You are My beloved Son; in You I am well pleased."***

The Man and the Woman were created to rule over the newly restored earth in the place of its present ruler, Satan. And in order to rule, the Man and the Woman were provided with sustenance. And such sustenance would have gone beyond the need for physical food to that which would also equip them for rulership.

The tree of life is first seen in the Garden of Eden in connection with the purpose for Man's creation, rulership. And we see it mentioned in Chapter 2 of Revelation as one of the overcomer's promises given to those who will fulfill God's purpose for Man and will rule with Christ in the Kingdom Age.

Revelation 2:7

7 "He who has an ear, let him hear what the Spirit says to the churches. To him who overcomes I will give to eat from the tree of life, which is in the midst of the Paradise of God." '

Where is the tree of life located in Rev. 2:7?

The tree of life then is located in the *paradise of God* – literally the garden of God, pleasure ground.

Genesis 1:11

11 Then God said, "Let the earth bring forth grass, the herb that yields seed, and the fruit tree that yields fruit according to its kind, whose seed is in itself, on the earth"; and it was so.

In this passage, we see that the tree of life could only bring forth fruit *according to its kind*. And the fruit of this tree in Eden was for the purpose of equipping those created in the image and likeness of God for rulership. So, the tree of life in the garden of God (Rev. 2:7) can only produce fruit for this same purpose.

And as Adam and the Woman were barred from this tree once they were no longer in the image and likeness of God, so it has been kept from human

beings ever since, awaiting the time when the overcomers will once again be in the image and likeness of God, having a redeemed spirit, a redeemed soul and a redeemed body covered in glory; then being in a position to eat its' fruit with rulership in view. More on this later in our study.

This tree of life is what will give the overcomer wisdom in Christ's Kingdom regarding their rulership/administration as His joint heir.

Proverbs 3:13, 18, 35

13 Happy is the man who finds wisdom, And the man who gains understanding; ... 18 She is a tree of life to those who take hold of her, And happy are all who retain her. ... 35 The wise shall inherit glory, But shame shall be the legacy of fools.

Revelation 22:14

14 Blessed are those who do His commandments, that they may have the right to the tree of life, and may enter through the gates into the city.

In Proverbs 3:35, what does it say *the wise shall inherit*?

Please read the parable below. We reviewed this passage in Gen. Part 1 –

Matthew 25:1-13

1 "Then the kingdom of heaven shall be likened to ten virgins who took their lamps and went out to meet the bridegroom. 2 "Now five of them were wise, and five were foolish. 3 "Those who were foolish took their lamps and took no oil with them, 4 "but the wise took oil in their vessels with their lamps. 5 "But while the bridegroom was delayed, they all slumbered and slept. 6 "And at midnight a cry was heard: 'Behold, the bridegroom is coming; go out to meet him!' 7 "Then all those virgins arose and trimmed their lamps. 8 "And the foolish said to the wise, 'Give us some of your oil, for our lamps are going out.' 9 "But the wise answered, saying, 'No, lest there should not be enough for us and you; but go

rather to those who sell, and buy for yourselves.' 10 "And while they went to buy, the bridegroom came, and those who were ready went in with him to the wedding; and the door was shut. 11 "Afterward the other virgins came also, saying, 'Lord, Lord, open to us!' 12 "But he answered and said, 'Assuredly, I say to you, I do not know you.' 13 "Watch therefore, for you know neither the day nor the hour in which the Son of Man is coming.

Recall that all ten virgins had oil in their lamps. They represent all Christians (ten being a number of completion). Oil is a picture of the Holy Spirit. How are the five wise and five foolish virgins contrasted?

The five foolish virgins represent the carnal Christian, ill prepared to meet the Master. The five wise virgins represent the Spirit led Christians, Christians prepared to meet Jesus, those found faithful at the Judgment Seat of Christ. These Christians will inherit His brilliant glory covering, enabling that Christian to co-reign with Christ in His Kingdom as His Bride.

And as we will see, we want to be wise (like the five wise virgins), that we *may have the right to the tree of life*, in His coming Kingdom.

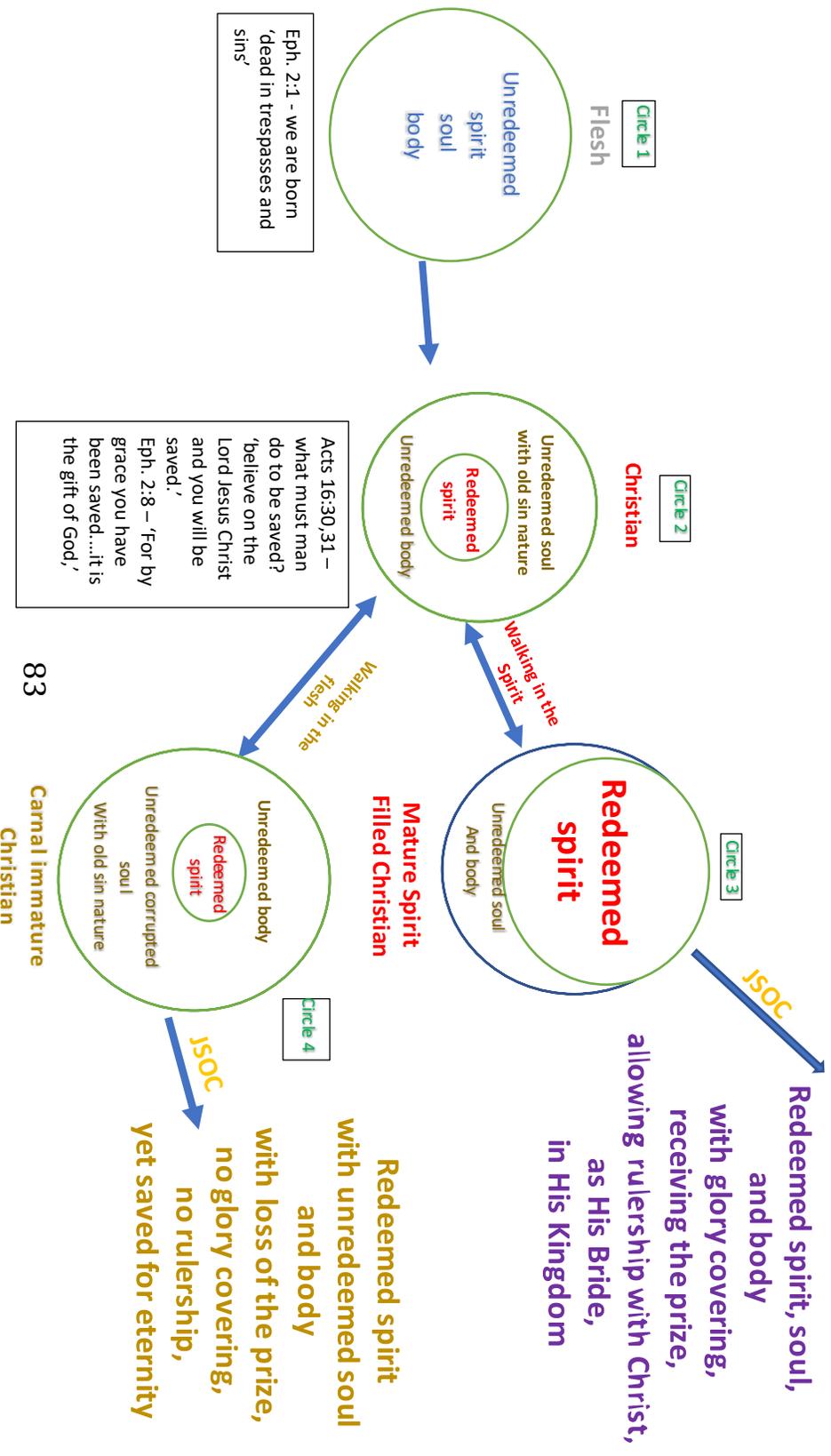
Well, we will end our lesson here and expand on this topic in Lesson 3.
Great job ladies!

Our Restoration: Redemption and Rulership



Redeemed spirit, soul,
and body
with glory covering,
receiving the prize,
allowing rulership with Christ,
as His Bride,
in His Kingdom

Redeemed spirit
with unredeemed soul
and body
with loss of the prize,
no glory covering,
no rulership,
yet saved for eternity



The Book of Genesis Part 2

Lesson Three – The Tree of Life and the Four rivers

Objective of Lesson Three: Examination of the tree of life and the four rivers.

Genesis 2:4-7

This is the history [generations] of the heavens and the earth when they were created, in the day that the LORD God made the earth and the heavens, 5 before any plant of the field was in the earth and before any herb of the field had grown. For the LORD God had not caused it to rain on the earth, and there was no man to till the ground; 6 but a mist [vapor] went up from the earth and watered the whole face of the ground. 7 And the LORD God formed man of the dust of the ground, and breathed into his nostrils the breath of life; and man became a living being.

Last lesson we saw that there was no plant or herb in the field. *The LORD God had not caused it to rain on the earth, and there was no man to till the ground. And we learned that a mist [vapor] went up from the earth and watered the whole face of the ground.*

We discussed the significance of rain in Scripture and that Man was formed or fashioned from the dust of the **restored** earth. The Hebrew word for ground is *adama*, from which we get the name Adam.

Rain was seen as a blessing in Scripture as it brings forth fruit and new birth. Lack of rain or drought conditions points to judgment. And water is a picture of the Word of God (Eph. 5:25,26; Psalm 63:1). Only the Word of God can quench our spiritual thirst.

After fashioning the man from the dust, God breathed into his nostrils the breath or **Spirit** of God.

And we learned that just as God breathed into Adam's nostrils the breath (or **Spirit**) of God, so all of Scripture is God breathed (having God's inspiration).

2Timothy 3:16-17

16 All Scripture is given by inspiration of God, and is profitable for doctrine, for reproof, for correction, for instruction in righteousness, 17 that the man of God may be complete, thoroughly equipped for every good work.

The phrase *inspiration of God* means *God breathed, given by inspiration of God*. It comes from the Greek word *theopneustos* with *theo* meaning God and *pneustos* meaning inspiration.

Physically, if someone stops breathing then they expire. Spiritually, it is His Spirit and Word that give us life and without it, we would expire (death or separation in the age to come) –

John 6:63

63 "It is the Spirit who gives life; the flesh profits nothing. The words that I speak to you are spirit, and they are life.

God's Word then is what gives us spiritual life and life in the age to come. It is our only source of truth. It is our spiritual nourishment, and it equips us to be complete, perfect. And according to the gospel of John, in John 1 we read that Jesus is the Word made flesh!

Genesis 2:8-17

8 The LORD God planted a garden eastward in Eden, and there He put the man whom He had formed. 9 And out of the ground the LORD God made every tree grow that is pleasant to the sight and good for food. The tree of life was also in

the midst of the garden, and the tree of the knowledge of good and evil. 10 Now a river went out of Eden to water the garden, and from there it parted and became four riverheads. 11 The name of the first is Pishon; it is the one which skirts the whole land of Havilah, where there is gold. 12 And the gold of that land is good. Bdellium and the onyx stone are there. 13 The name of the second river is Gihon; it is the one which goes around the whole land of Cush. 14 The name of the third river is Hiddekel; it is the one which goes toward the east of Assyria. The fourth river is the Euphrates. 15 Then the LORD God took the man and put him in the garden of Eden to tend and keep it. 16 And the LORD God commanded the man, saying, "Of every tree of the garden you may freely eat; 17 "but of the tree of the knowledge of good and evil you shall not eat, for in the day that you eat of it you shall surely die."

What did God make out of the ground according to v.9 and what two trees are singled out?

In Gen. 1:26 we read that God created man to have dominion (rule) over His restored creation.

The Man and the Woman were created to rule over the newly restored earth in the place of its present ruler, Satan. And in order to rule, the Man and the Woman were provided with sustenance. And as mentioned in the previous lesson, sustenance would have gone beyond the need for physical food to that which would also equip them for rulership.

We began our examination of the tree of life. This tree of life is first seen in the Garden of Eden in connection with the purpose for Man's creation, rulership. And we see it mentioned in Chapter 2 of Revelation as one of the overcomer's promises given to those who will fulfill God's purpose for Man and will rule with Christ in the Kingdom Age.

Revelation 2:7

7 "He who has an ear, let him hear what the Spirit says to the churches. To him who overcomes I will give to eat from the tree of life, which is in the midst of the Paradise of God." '

The tree of life in Rev. 2:7 is located in the *paradise of God* – literally the *garden of God, pleasure ground*.

And as Adam and the Woman were barred from this tree once they were no longer in the image and likeness of God, so it has been kept from human beings ever since, awaiting the time when the overcomers will once again be in the image and likeness of God, having a redeemed spirit, a redeemed soul and a redeemed body covered in glory; then being in a position to eat its' fruit with rulership in view. More on this later in our study.

This tree of life is what will give the overcomer wisdom in Christ's Kingdom regarding their rulership/administration as His joint heir. More on this later in our study.

What do you think was the purpose or reason for planting the *tree of the knowledge of good and evil*?

As we will see in Gen.3, the tree of the knowledge of good and evil functioned as a test of obedience. Adam and the Woman had to make a choice – obey or disobey God's commandment. And we will see that they failed the test.

In Gen. 2:10 we read that *a river went out of Eden to water the garden*. How many riverheads came from this river and what is the significance of this number?

Four is the number of creation with respect to the earth, eg., four seasons, four points of the compass, four elements of matter in ancient culture (earth, water, fire, and air), etc.

Please list the four riverheads from the one river and take note of the comments regarding each riverbed. (Remember that the earth was one land mass before the flood of Noah's day.)

The name of the first is Pishon; it is the one which skirts the whole land of Havilah, where there is gold. 12 And the gold of that land is good. Bdellium and the onyx stone are there.

The first riverbed mentioned is *Pison*, which means *increase, water poured forth, overflowing*. This river encircled the land of Havilah and Havilah means circle. It is only mentioned once in Scripture, however, the gold, bdellium (gum resin), and onyx found in this region are mentioned elsewhere.

We can read about these gems when Lucifer reigned in Eden in eternity past –

Ezekiel 28:13

*You were in Eden, the garden of God; Every precious stone was your covering: The sardius, topaz, and diamond, **Beryl, onyx**, and jasper, Sapphire, turquoise, and emerald with gold. The workmanship of your timbrels and pipes Was prepared for you on the day you were created.*

And as intriguing as it is, we can read about some of these gems, that existed in eternity past, as being present with rulership in eternity future!

Revelation 21:10-11, 19-23

*10 And he carried me away in the Spirit to a great and high mountain, and showed me the great city, the holy Jerusalem, descending out of heaven from God, 11 having the glory of God. Her light was like a most precious stone, like a jasper stone, clear as crystal. ... 19 The foundations of the wall of the city were adorned with all kinds of precious stones: the first foundation was **jasper, the second sapphire, the third chalcedony, the fourth emerald, 20 the fifth sardonyx, the sixth sardius, the seventh chrysolite, the eighth beryl, the ninth topaz, the tenth chrysoprase, the eleventh jacinth, and the twelfth amethyst.** 21 The twelve gates were twelve pearls: each individual gate was of one pearl. And the street of the city was pure gold, like transparent glass. 22 But I saw no temple in it, for the Lord God Almighty and the Lamb are its temple. 23 The city had no need of the sun or of the moon to shine in it, for the glory of God illuminated it. The Lamb is its light.*

Also, God instructed Moses to place precious gems in the breastplate of the Jewish priests –

Exodus 28:15, 17-21

*15 "You shall make the breastplate of judgment. Artistically woven according to the workmanship of the ephod you shall make it: of gold, blue, purple, and scarlet thread, and fine woven linen, you shall make it. ... 17 "And you shall put settings of stones in it, four rows of stones: The first row shall be a sardius, a topaz, and an emerald; this shall be the first row; 18 "the second row shall be a turquoise, a sapphire, and a diamond; 19 "the third row, a jacinth, an agate, and an amethyst; 20 "**and the fourth row, a beryl, an onyx, and a jasper.** They shall be set in gold settings. 21 "And the stones shall have the names of the sons of Israel, twelve according to their names, like the engravings of a signet, each one with its own name; they shall be according to the twelve tribes.*

The next river is *Gihon*, which means *bursting forth*. This is also the name of the spring near Jerusalem where the anointing and proclaiming of Solomon as King took place (1Kings 1:45). King Solomon is a type of Christ in His glorious Thousand-Year Reign as King Priest.

13 The name of the second river is Gihon; it is the one which goes around the whole land of Cush.

This river went around Cush, which is Ethiopia.

The third river is *Hiddekel*, which means *rapid*.

14 The name of the third river is Hiddekel; it is the one which goes toward the east of Assyria.

This river coursed eastward toward Assyria. This river is also known as the river Tigris. It is referred to as the *great river* in the book of Daniel.

As Daniel sat by the side of the Tigris River (river of Hiddekel), the Lord revealed to Daniel, His prophecy regarding Israel in a time yet future, at the end of the tribulation. (And rulership is seen with regards to this river also.)

Daniel 10:4-6, 9-13

4 Now on the twenty-fourth day of the first month, as I was by the side of the great river, that is, the Tigris, 5 I lifted my eyes and looked, and behold, a certain man clothed in linen, whose waist was girded with gold of Uphaz! 6 His body was like beryl, his face like the appearance of lightning, his eyes like torches of fire, his arms and feet like burnished bronze in color, and the sound of his words like the voice of a multitude. ... 9 Yet I heard the sound of his words; and while I heard the sound of his words I was in a deep sleep on my face, with my face to the ground. 10 Suddenly, a hand touched me, which made me tremble on my knees and on the palms of my hands. 11 And he said to me, "O Daniel, man greatly beloved, understand the words that I speak to you, and stand upright, for I have now been sent to you." While he was speaking this word to me, I stood trembling. 12 Then he said to me, "Do not fear, Daniel, for from the first day that you set your heart to understand, and to humble yourself before your God, your words were heard; and I have come because of your words. 13 "But the prince of the kingdom of Persia withstood me twenty-one days; and behold, Michael, one of the chief princes, came to help me, for I had been left alone there with the kings of Persia.

Who do you think the *certain man clothed in linen* could be? (Hint: Please compare to Rev. 1:12-17 below for the answer.)

In Daniel 10:5-9, we see a vision of the Lord Jesus in a preincarnate appearance! His description is similar to the one given of Christ as the judge in Rev. 1:12-17 –

Revelation 1:12-17

12 Then I turned to see the voice that spoke with me. And having turned I saw seven golden lampstands, 13 and in the midst of the seven lampstands One like the Son of Man, clothed with a garment down to the feet and girded about the chest with a golden band. 14 His head and hair were white like wool, as white as snow, and His eyes like a flame of fire; 15 His feet were like fine brass, as if refined in a furnace, and His voice as the sound of many waters; 16 He had in His right hand seven stars, out of His mouth went a sharp two-edged sword, and His countenance was like the sun shining in its strength. 17 And when I saw Him, I fell at His feet as dead. But He laid His right hand on me, saying to me, "Do not be afraid; I am the First and the Last.

The *certain man clothed in linen* is Christ. Please review the similarities of the man in Daniel 10 and of Christ in Rev. 1, in the table below.

Rev. 1:12-17

12 Then I turned to see the voice that spoke with me. And having turned I saw seven golden lampstands, 13 and in the midst of the seven lampstands One like the Son of Man, clothed with a garment down to the feet and girded about the chest with a golden band. 14 His head and hair were white like wool, as white as snow, and His eyes like a flame of fire; 15 His feet were like fine brass, as if refined in a furnace, and His voice as the sound of many waters; 16 He had in His right hand seven stars, out of His mouth went a sharp two-edged sword, and His countenance was like the sun shining in its strength. 17 And when I saw Him, I fell at His feet as dead. But He laid His right hand on me, saying to me, "Do not be afraid; I am the First and the Last.

Like the son of man
Clothed in garment down to the feet
Girded about the chest w/a golden band (chest not waist as in Daniel)
 Head and hair white like wool – as white as snow
Eyes like a flame of fire
Feet were like fine brass
 Voice as the sound of **many waters**
 7 stars in right hand
 Sharp, two-edged sword in mouth
 Countenance like **sun shining** in its strength
Laid right hand on me (John)
 Said 'Do not be afraid'
 Declared Himself as the first and the last

Dan. 10:5-9

5 I lifted my eyes and looked, and behold, a certain man clothed in linen, whose waist was girded with gold of Uphaz! 6 His body was like beryl, his face like the appearance of lightning, his eyes like torches of fire, his arms and feet like burnished bronze in color, and the sound of his words like the voice of a multitude. 7 And I, Daniel, alone saw the vision, for the men who were with me did not see the vision; but a great terror fell upon them, so that they fled to hide themselves. 8 Therefore I was left alone when I saw this great vision, and no strength remained in me; for my vigor was turned to frailty in me, and I retained no strength. 9 Yet I heard the sound of his words; and while I heard the sound of his words I was in a deep sleep on my face, with my face to the ground. Christ- Son of Man (Luke 5:24)

Clothed in linen
 Waist **girded with gold** (waist not chest as in Revelation)
 Body like beryl
 Face like the appearance of **lightning**
Eyes like torches of fire
Arms and feet like bronze
 Words like the voice of **a multitude**
A Hand touched me

Verses 4-6,9, of Daniel 10 may be incidences of Theophanies. A Theophany is a visible manifestation of God to mankind.

Theophanies may take three primary forms:

1. Visible manifestations most often involve the Angel of the Lord appearing in human form but could also include other visible encounters such as the fire and smoke on Mount Sinai.
2. Auditory manifestations are indicated by the many “and the LORD said unto...” statements found throughout the Old Testament, but also include unique encounters like the “still small voice” that spoke to Elijah in the cave (1Kings 19:12).
3. Visions and dreams also exhibit theophany characteristics, such as Jacob’s ladder dream (Gen. 28:12), Daniel’s man in linen vision (Dan. 10-12) and Zechariah’s man among the myrtle trees vision (Zech. 1:7-17). However, whether visions and dreams should be considered theophanies is controversial among scholars since they involve a metaphysical or spiritual presence rather than a physical one.

In Daniel 10:5-9, we see a vision of the Lord Jesus in a preincarnate appearance! His description is similar to the one given of Christ as the judge in Rev. 1:12-17.

The Book of Daniel addresses the nation of Israel. Remember, Israel is God the Father’s wife and God’s purpose for His people, was to rule in a theocracy under the God of Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob. Due to their years of spiritual harlotry and dishonoring the Sabbaths, the theocracy ended, and Israel was taken captive by the gentile kingdom of Babylon followed by the Medes-Persians, then the Grecian Empire under Alexander the Great. The governance of these gentile kingdoms was seated in Babylon.

(For further discussion on this topic, please review **Israel’s Seventy Year Exile** in the appendix)

Currently, Israel has been set aside during this church dispensation. After the rapture of the church, God will again deal with His people Israel. Israel will be persecuted severely in the last gentile kingdom, seated in Babylon, the

antichrist's kingdom. According to the Book of Micah, the antichrist will be an Assyrian (Micah 5: 5-8).

The latter days in Dan. 10:14, refers to the tribulation period in a time yet future. And through the persecution and suffering that Israel will endure during the *latter days*, Israel will be brought to a place of repentance, and they will recognize Him who they pierced –

Zechariah 12:10

10 "And I will pour on the house of David and on the inhabitants of Jerusalem the Spirit of grace and supplication; then they will look on Me whom they pierced. Yes, they will mourn for Him as one mourns for his only son, and grieve for Him as one grieves for a firstborn.

After the tribulation, Israel, God the Father's wife, will be brought into the land and they will rule from the earthly portion of the Messianic Kingdom!

Rulership is seen in view as Daniel received and understood the message from the Lord, as he sat *by the side of the great river, that is, the Tigris*.

All nations of the world are currently under rulership of Satan and the fallen angels (Eph. 6:10-12), except the nation of Israel, which is under Michael, the arch angel (Dan. 10:21; 12:1).

Ephesians 6:10-12

10 Finally, my brethren, be strong in the Lord and in the power of His might. 11 Put on the whole armor of God, that you may be able to stand against the wiles of the devil. 12 For we do not wrestle against flesh and blood, but against principalities, against powers, against the rulers [princes] of the darkness of this age, against spiritual hosts of wickedness in the heavenly places.

In Daniel 10:13, the *princes* are angelic beings ruling over kingdoms. And as mentioned above, all gentile nations or kingdoms are under the rulership of princes (fallen angels), which are under Satan's authority (Eph. 6:11-13).

Angels have a strong impact on the events that occur on the earth. In Daniel 10, we see a great conflict or war that takes place both in the heavens and then on earth. The messenger sent to Daniel is an angel that **did not rebel** against God, in eternity past.

Who is the chief prince (angel) that came to aid the messenger (angel) sent to Daniel in Dan. 10:13? Where else do we read about this angel? (Hint: read Rev. 12:7-10.)

Michael, the archangel, is the chief prince that came to the angel's aid. And Michael is the angelic ruler over the nation of Israel. The Prince of Persia is a fallen angel in Satan's realm of control, with the responsibility for the gentile nation of Persia. He is a rebellious angel ruling from the heavens. This prince withheld God's messenger angel for twenty-one days and then Michael intervened.

(Note that 21 is a multiple of 3×7 with 3 being the number for divine perfection and 7 pointing to the Seventh Day Sabbath, the Messianic Reign of Christ. At this time, God will restore all things – divine perfection- and that includes the plans of rulership on the earth for His people, Israel.)

Satan and his princes, the demonic angels, will continue to rule until Christ returns as King of kings and Lord of lords. At that time, Christ, along with His Bride taken from the church, will replace Satan and his demonic princes in the heavenly portion of the Millennial Reign.

After their national repentance at the end of the tribulation, Israel will be brought into the covenanted land in the Messianic Kingdom, and they will rule from the earthly portion.

Again, rulership is seen in view as Daniel received and understood the message from the Lord, as he sat *by the side of the great river, that is, the Tigris*.

Daniel 3:23-25

23 And these three men, Shadrach, Meshach, and Abed-Nego, fell down bound into the midst of the burning fiery furnace. 24 Then King Nebuchadnezzar was astonished; and he rose in haste and spoke, saying to his counselors, "Did we not cast three men bound into the midst of the fire?" They answered and said to the king, "True, O king." 25 "Look!" he answered, "I see four men loose, walking in the midst of the fire; and they are not hurt, and the form of the fourth is like the Son of God."

Describe the theophany seen in this passage? Can you think of any other theophanies in Scripture?

Now let's review the fourth river in Gen. 2, the Euphrates River. Euphrates means **fruitfulness**. (It comes from an unused root meaning *to break forth*.)

Genesis 15:18

18 On the same day the LORD made a covenant with Abram, saying: "To your descendants I have given this land, from the river of Egypt to the great river, the River Euphrates--

Genesis 17:4, 6-8

4 "As for Me, behold, My covenant is with you, and you shall be a father of many nations. ... 6 "I will make you exceedingly fruitful; and I will make nations of you, and kings shall come from you. 7 "And I will establish My covenant between Me and you and your descendants after you in their generations, for an everlasting covenant, to be God to you and your descendants after you. 8 "Also I give to you and your descendants after you the land in which you are a stranger, all the land of Canaan, as an everlasting possession; and I will be their God."

The river Euphrates then is a boundary for the promised land of Canaan that would be given to Israel *as an everlasting possession*. And although the theocracy in the promised land was eventually removed years ago, due to Israel's disobedience and unbelief, there is a time yet future, when they will rule on the earth in a theocracy, under their God - the God of Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob. And they will be given the land *from the river of Egypt to the great river, the River Euphrates*.

So, we can see that all four riverbeds, from one river, point to rulership.

Pison – This riverbed encircled the land of Havilah and in the land of Havilah we see gems present in the priestly garment and in rulership of eternity past (Ezek. 28:13) and eternity future (Revelation 21:10-11, 19-23).

Gihon - which means *bursting forth*. This is the name of the spring near Jerusalem where the anointing and proclaiming of Solomon as King took place (1Kings 1:45). (And King Solomon is a type of Christ ruling in His glorious Millennial Kingdom!)

Tigris – rulership regarding Israel is seen in view as Daniel received and understood the message from the Lord, as he sat *by the side of the great river, that is, the Tigris*.

Euphrates - means **fruitfulness**. a boundary for the promised land of Canaan that would be given to Israel, to rule, *as an everlasting possession*.

Even the word *river* in Scripture, often points to fruitbearing and rulership. And this is no surprise, as all of Scripture moves to that Seventh Day out ahead, when rulership will change. Christ along with His firstborn sons – the Bride of Christ taken from the church and Israel - will reign in a theocracy in His Millennial reign.

Isaiah 66:5, 10, 12

5 Hear the word of the LORD, You who tremble at His word: "Your brethren who hated you, Who cast you out for My name's sake, said, 'Let the LORD be glorified, That we may see your joy.' But they shall be ashamed." ... 10 "Rejoice with Jerusalem, And be glad with her, all you who love her; Rejoice for joy with her, all you who mourn for her; ... 12 For thus says the LORD: "**Behold, I will extend peace to her like a river, And the glory of the Gentiles like a flowing stream.** Then you shall feed; On her sides shall you be carried, And be dandled on her knees.

Psalm 65:4, 9, 11

4 Blessed is the man You choose, And cause to approach You, That he may dwell in Your courts. We shall be satisfied with the goodness of Your house, Of Your holy temple. ... 9 **You visit the earth and water it, You greatly enrich it; The river of God is full of water; You provide their grain, For so You have prepared it.** ... 11 You crown the year with Your goodness, And Your paths drip with abundance.

Psalm 1:1-3

1 Blessed is the man Who walks not in the counsel of the ungodly, Nor stands in the path of sinners, Nor sits in the seat of the scornful; 2 But his delight is in the law of the LORD, And in His law he meditates day and night. 3 He shall be like a tree Planted by the rivers of water, **That brings forth its fruit in its season, Whose leaf also shall not wither; And whatever he does shall prosper.**

In these passages above, what does the river(s) provide?

John 7:37-39

*37 On the last day, that great day of the feast, Jesus stood and cried out, saying, "If anyone thirsts, let him come to Me and drink. 38 "He who believes in Me, as the Scripture has said, **out of his heart will flow rivers of living water.**" 39 But this He spoke concerning the Spirit, whom those believing in Him would receive; **for the Holy Spirit was not yet given**, because Jesus was not yet glorified.*

This passage speaks of the Holy Spirit that would be sent after Christ's work on the cross.

But this passage also points to a time yet future. The phrase *the last day, that great day of the feast*, refers to the Day of the last of the seven feasts Israel was to commemorate each year, the Feast of Tabernacles. This feast portrays Messiah's thousand-year reign, The Sabbath Day out ahead, the Millennial Reign of Christ, when all things will be restored.

In that day, the last day, the Seventh Day, the Sabbath Day out ahead, God's firstborn, the Bride of Christ taken from the Church, will rule in the heavenly realm. God's firstborn, Israel, will have God's Spirit placed within them and they will rule on the earthly portion of the Messiah's Kingdom. And *out of his heart will flow rivers of living water*.

Ezekiel 36:24-28

24 "For I will take you from among the nations, gather you out of all countries, and bring you into your own land. 25 "Then I will sprinkle clean water on you, and you shall be clean; I will cleanse you from all your filthiness and from all your idols. 26 "I will give you a new heart and put a new spirit within you; I will take the heart of stone out of your flesh and give you a heart of flesh. 27 "I will put My Spirit within you and cause you to walk in My statutes, and you will keep My judgments and do them. 28 "Then you shall dwell in the land that I gave to your fathers; you shall be My people, and I will be your God.

God does indeed tell the end from the beginning!

Isaiah 46:9-10

9 Remember the former things of old, For I am God, and there is no other; I am God, and there is none like Me, 10 Declaring the end from the beginning, And from ancient times things that are not yet done, Saying, 'My counsel shall stand, And I will do all My pleasure,'

And here is another intriguing passage to reflect upon –

Ecclesiastes 3:14-15

14 I know that whatever God does, It shall be forever. Nothing can be added to it, And nothing taken from it. God does it, that men should fear before Him. 15 That which is has already been, And what is to be has already been; And God requires an account of what is past.

Genesis 2:15-17

15 Then the LORD God took the man and put him in the garden of Eden to tend and keep it. 16 And the LORD God commanded the man, saying, "Of every tree of the garden you may freely eat; 17 "but of the tree of the knowledge of good and evil you shall not eat, for in the day that you eat of it you shall surely die."

Why did the Lord put Adam in the garden of Eden according to v. 15?

The *LORD God took the man and put him in the garden of Eden to tend [work or serve] and keep it.* The word *keep* means to *guard, preserve, protect as a*

watchman. Adam was placed in a position to guard and protect the restored earth and rule over God's creation.
Eden means *pleasure* and *garden*.

The Man and the Woman were created to rule over (guard, protect) the newly restored earth in the place of its' present ruler, Satan.

And throughout Scripture, we can see that the Garden of Eden refers to a place of rulership –

In Eternity past, we read that Lucifer ruled in the garden of Eden –

Ezekiel 28:13-15

*13 You were in **Eden, the garden of God**; Every precious stone was your covering: The sardius, topaz, and diamond, Beryl, onyx, and jasper, Sapphire, turquoise, and emerald with gold. The workmanship of your timbrels and pipes Was prepared for you on the day you were created. 14 "You were the anointed cherub who covers; I established you; You were on the holy mountain of God; You walked back and forth in the midst of fiery stones. 15 You were perfect in your ways from the day you were created, Till iniquity was found in you.*

Lucifer was placed in the garden of Eden, as the anointed cherub, to rule before his fall.

Adam and the woman were placed in the garden of Eden to rule before their fall.

And for the overcoming Christian, we will be placed in the garden of Eden - the paradise of God – to rule as a joint heir with Christ, should we be found faithful at the Judgment Seat of Christ.

Revelation 2:7

*He that hath an ear, let him hear what the Spirit saith unto the churches; To him that overcometh will I give to eat of the tree of life, which is in the midst of the **paradise [garden] of God**.*

As mentioned earlier, the tree of life is first seen in the Garden of Eden in connection with the purpose for Man's creation, rulership. In Rev.2:7, we read that one of the overcomer's promises is to rule with Christ in the Kingdom Age. Rulership then is, and always has been, man's purpose (Gen. 1:26). And the tree of life, which provides physical and spiritual sustenance, is in the ***paradise of God***– literally **the garden of God**.

One last important point. Scripture shows us that the Lord will restore the earth to its original state before the fall and before the flood. And just as the tree of life is seen again in the ***paradise of God*** (the garden of God), so we see it mentioned again, in eternity, future beyond the Millennial Reign of Christ, in the new heaven and earth in Rev. 22:1-5 –

1 And he showed me a pure river of water of life, clear as crystal, proceeding from the throne of God and of the Lamb. 2 In the middle of its street, and on either side of the river, was the tree of life, which bore twelve fruits, each tree yielding its fruit every month. The leaves of the tree were for the healing of the nations. 3 And there shall be no more curse, but the throne of God and of the Lamb shall be in it, and His servants shall serve Him. 4 They shall see His face, and His name shall be on their foreheads. 5 There shall be no night there: They need no lamp nor light of the sun, for the Lord God gives them light. And they shall reign forever and ever.

And will see *one river* again (Gen. 2:10), providing the *water of life* in eternity future beyond the Lord's Millennial Reign.

The word *clear* in v. 1 is the Greek work *lampros*. It means brilliant, splendid, magnificent. This *pure river of water of life, clear as crystal, proceeding from the throne of God and of the Lamb*, will indeed be magnificent and splendid!

Why is there *no lamp nor light of the sun* needed?

Verse 3 says that in eternity future, *there shall be no more curse, but the throne of God and of the Lamb shall be in it, and His servants shall serve*

Him. And rulership, regarding man, will extend out into eternity future, as v. 5 says *And they shall reign forever and ever.*

God's plans for man are enormous! Recall that angelic beings were initially created to rule in eternity past. And the fact that God would create man for the purpose of replacing angelic rulership in a restored creation, should make us ponder, *what is man that they are mindful –*

Psalm 8:3-6

3 When I consider Your heavens, the work of Your fingers, The moon and the stars, which You have ordained, 4 What is man that You are mindful of him, And the son of man that You visit him? 5 For You have made him a little lower than the angels, And You have crowned him with glory and honor. 6 You have made him to have dominion over the works of Your hands; You have put all things under his feet,

That's it for today. May the Lord bless you for your diligence and desire to study His Word.

The Book of Genesis Part 2

Lesson Four – Christ and His Bride Seen in Adam and the Woman

Objective of Lesson Four: The First Adam and the woman as a type of Christ and His Bride.

In Lesson 3, we learned that the tree of life is first seen in the Garden of Eden in connection with the purpose for Man's creation, rulership. And we see it mentioned in Chapter 2 of Revelation as one of the overcomer's promises given to those who will fulfill God's purpose for Man and will rule with Christ in the Kingdom Age.

Revelation 2:7

7 "He who has an ear, let him hear what the Spirit says to the churches. To him who overcomes I will give to eat from the tree of life, which is in the midst of the Paradise of God." "

We examined the four riverbeds (from one river) and the relationship to rulership.

Pison – This riverbed encircled the land of Havilah and in the land of Havilah we see gems present in rulership of eternity past (Ezek. 28:13) and eternity future (Revelation 21:10-11, 19-23).

Gihon - which means *bursting forth*. This is the name of the spring near Jerusalem where the anointing and proclaiming of Solomon as King took place (1Kings 1:45). (And King Solomon is a type of Christ ruling in His glorious Millennial Kingdom!)

Tigris – rulership regarding Israel is seen in view as Daniel received and understood the message from the Lord, as he sat *by the side of the great river, that is, the Tigris.*

Euphrates - means **fruitfulness**. a boundary for the promised land of Canaan that would be given to Israel, to rule, *as an everlasting possession.*

Even the word *river* in Scripture, often points to fruit bearing and rulership. And this is no surprise, as all of Scripture moves to that Seventh Day out ahead, when rulership will change.

And lastly, we read that *LORD God took the man and put him in the garden of Eden to tend [work or serve] and keep it.* The word *keep* means to *guard, preserve, protect as a watchman.* Adam was placed in a position to guard and protect the restored earth and rule over God's creation.

Eden means *pleasure* and *garden* is the same word referred to as *paradise* in Scripture.

The Man and the Woman were created to rule over (guard, protect) the newly restored earth in the place of its' present ruler, Satan.

And throughout Scripture, we can see that the Garden of Eden refers to a place of rulership.

Genesis 2:16-20

16 And the LORD God commanded the man, saying, "Of every tree of the garden you may freely eat; 17 "but of the tree of the knowledge of good and evil you shall not eat, for in the day that you eat of it you shall surely die." 18 And the LORD God said, "It is not good that man should be alone; I will make him a helper comparable to him." 19 Out of the ground the LORD God formed every beast of the field and every bird of the air, and brought them to Adam to see what he would call them. And whatever Adam called each living creature, that was its name. 20 So Adam gave names to all cattle, to the birds of the air, and to every beast of the field. But for Adam there was not found a helper comparable to him.

The tree of the knowledge of good and evil functioned as a test of obedience. Adam and the Woman had to make a choice – obey or disobey God’s commandment. And as we will see in chapter 3, they failed the test.

In v. 18 what did God say? Who would God make the helper like?

God would make Adam a *helper comparable to him* (Adam). This is significant. In Romans 5:14, we read that Adam is a type of Christ –

14 Nevertheless death reigned from Adam to Moses, even over those who had not sinned according to the likeness of the transgression of Adam, who is a type of Him who was to come.

Hold that thought and we will be expanding on it in a little while.

What did the Lord do in v. 19?

In Semitic culture, the power to name someone or something is associated with dominion or authority over it. Also, in the phrase *Adam called each living creature*, the word *called* is the same word used in the following verses, showing God’s authority over all of creation –

Genesis 1:5, 8, 10

*5 God **called** the light Day, and the darkness He called Night.*

*8 And God **called** the firmament Heaven. So the evening and the morning were the second day.*

*10 And God **called** the dry land Earth, and the gathering together of the waters He **called** Seas.*

In v. 20 we read *But for Adam there was not found a helper comparable to him.* The word *helper* in v.18 means *a helper comparable, suitable for, counterpart.*

Genesis 2:21-25

21 And the LORD God caused a deep sleep to fall on Adam, and he slept; and He took one of his ribs, and closed up the flesh in its place. 22 Then the rib which the LORD God had taken from man He made into a woman, and He brought her to the man. 23 And Adam said: "This is now bone of my bones And flesh of my flesh; She shall be called Woman, Because she was taken out of Man." 24 Therefore a man shall leave his father and mother and be joined to his wife, and they shall become one flesh. 25 And they were both naked, the man and his wife, and were not ashamed.

We examined the formation of the woman in Gen. Part 1, but review is always good.

So, how did God form the helper, the woman?

God caused a deep sleep to fall upon Adam and he slept. Then God took his rib, closed his flesh, and made or built the woman from the rib taken from Adam's side. The woman was created in Adam at the very beginning, prior to her being brought into existence, then being built, or fashioned as a separate person later. According to vs. 23, what does the name woman mean?

Woman is the Hebrew word *'ishshah* which is a feminine noun meaning *wife, bride, female*. God *made* (literally *built*) the woman from a part of Adam's body to be a helper to Adam.

She shall be called Woman, because she was taken out of Man."

Read verse 24. This describes the scriptural marriage relationship. Man is to leave his parents and cleave to his wife and they are to become one. Woman was not taken from Adam's head to be above him or his feet to be below him but from his side to be his helper, to co-reign alongside him. And all that forms a type of something yet future –

Romans 5 :14

*14 Nevertheless death reigned from Adam to Moses, even over those who had not sinned according to the likeness of the transgression of Adam, **who is a type of Him who was to come.***

In Romans 5:14b it says “ ... *Adam was a type of Him Who was to come.*”

Remember that a “type” is something that points to someone or something else. It can be a person, place, thing or event from the Bible. What the type points to is called the antitype.

1 Corinthians 15:22, 45

22 For as in Adam all die, even so in Christ all shall be made alive. ... 45 And so it is written, "The first man Adam became a living being." The last Adam became a life-giving spirit.

Of whom is Adam a type?

Adam is a type of Christ.

Once we trust in Christ, we are made a new creature in Jesus Christ, and we are part of the body of Christ.

2 Corinthians 5:17

17 Therefore, if anyone is in Christ, he is a new creation; old things have passed away; behold, all things have become new.

1 Corinthians 12:12

12 For as the body is one and has many members, but all the members of that one body, being many, are one body, so also is Christ.

Adam is a type of Christ. The Church is in the body of Christ just as the Woman was in the body of Adam. Prior to the Woman being *made* (built) she had been created in Adam, a picture of us having been created in Christ Jesus.

1 Corinthians 12:27

27 Now you are the body of Christ, and members individually.

Who makes up Christ's body according to 1 Corinthians 12:27?

God determined that it was not good for the Man to be alone, and He made a helper comparable to have co-dominion with Adam. The word *made* in Genesis 2:22 means "to build". God determined that it was not good for His Son, the last Adam, to be alone and He is presently in the process of building a helper comparable to co-reign with the Son in His future Millennial Kingdom!

Now let's compare *Genesis 2:23, 24* with *Ephesians 5:30-32* to better understand this.

Please underline the similar words in these passages.

Genesis 2:23

23 And Adam said: "This is now bone of my bones And flesh of my flesh; She shall be called Woman, Because she was taken out of Man."

Ephesians 5:30-32

30 For we are members of His body, of His flesh and of His bones. 31 "For this reason a man shall leave his father and mother and be joined to his wife, and the two shall become one flesh." 32 This is a great mystery, but I speak concerning Christ and the Church.

Can you see the type and antitype in these verses?

The word mystery in v.32 speaks of *something in the Old Testament, which is only fully understood when placed alongside the New Testament*. Therefore, it is so important to study all of Scripture!

The great mystery concerns Christ and His Church. And this great mystery begins to be laid out in the first book of the Bible in Genesis 2.

So how did God form the woman?

God caused a deep sleep to fall upon Adam. God then removed a part of his body from his side. God then built the woman and then God presented her back to him so that the two could become one and rule over the restored creation.

Once God removed part of Adam's body (the rib), was Adam incomplete?

After Adam had been put into a *deep sleep* his side was opened, and God took a rib from Adam's side and *made her a woman*. The Hebrew word translated *made* in this verse is *banah*, which means, "to build."

An important point to remember is that the Woman was entirely built from Adam's body but was not the whole of Adam's body.

Eve was taken out of Adam and then presented back to Adam for *a helper comparable to him*. In this respect, Eve, being presented back to Adam for *a helper comparable*, completed Adam and provided completeness for Eve as well. Once God made the woman and presented her to Adam, he became complete again and the two became one flesh, to have dominion over God's creation.

Compare this to **Heb 2:10** -

"For it was fitting for Him, for whom are all things, and through whom are all things, in bringing many sons to glory, to perfect [complete] the author of their salvation through sufferings."

Is the marriage relationship important to God? Can you see why the enemy wants to destroy and distort this foundation? Read Ephesians 5: 23-32 again.

Since Adam is a type of Jesus (Romans 5:14b), then how would God form the Bride of Christ? God caused a deep sleep to fall upon Adam. So, what about Christ?

When thinking this through, it is important to keep in mind that in the Bible, death is often referred to as sleep.

John 11:11, 13-14

11and after that He said to them, "Our friend Lazarus sleeps, but I go that I may wake him up." ... 13 However, Jesus spoke of his death, but they thought that He was speaking about taking rest in sleep. 14 Then Jesus said to them plainly, "Lazarus is dead."

Since *death* in Scripture is often referred to as *sleep*, then let's look to see how this idea of Adam being put into a deep sleep in order to build his wife- is actually a type of how God will build the Bride for Christ.

Romans 5:6, 8

6 For when we were still without strength, in due time Christ died for the ungodly. ... 8 But God demonstrates His own love toward us, in that while we were still sinners, Christ died for us.

At Calvary 2,000 years ago, Christ, the One whom Adam typifies, was put into a deep sleep through His death on the cross.

John 19:32-37

32 Then the soldiers came and broke the legs of the first and of the other who was crucified with Him. 33 But when they came to Jesus and saw that He was already dead, they did not break His legs. 34 But one of the soldiers pierced His side with a spear, and immediately blood and water came out. 35 And he who has seen has testified, and his testimony is true; and he knows that he is telling the truth, so that you may believe. 36 For these things were done that the Scripture should be fulfilled, "Not one of His bones shall be broken." 37 And again another Scripture says, "They shall look on Him whom they pierced."

Notice that the soldiers did not break the legs of our Lord Jesus as He was already dead. The soldiers would often break the legs of criminals being crucified in order to expedite their death. With the legs fractured, the criminals could not push up on the small platform by their feet, thereby hindering inspiration and suffocating the individual.

But there is a deeper spiritual meaning regarding the bones of our Lord not being broken.

1Corinthians 5:7

*7 Therefore purge out the old leaven, that you may be a new lump, since you truly are unleavened. For indeed **Christ, our Passover, was sacrificed for us.***

In this verse, what is the type which Christ is compared to?

The Passover lamb is a type of Christ. He is the sinless lamb without blemish as described in 1Peter 1:18,19. And according to Exodus 12: 5,26, the Passover lamb was not to have a bone broken –

Exodus 12:5, 46

*5 'Your lamb shall be without blemish, a male of the first year. You may take it from the sheep or from the goats. ... 46 "In one house it shall be eaten; you shall not carry any of the flesh outside the house, **nor shall you break one of its bones.***

What Messianic prophecies are given in John 19: 36 and 37?

Psalm 34:20

20 He guards all his bones; Not one of them is broken.

Psalm 22:1, 6-7, 12-14, 16-18

1 To the Chief Musician. Set to "The Deer of the Dawn." A Psalm of David. My God, My God, why have You forsaken Me? Why are You so far from helping Me, And from the words of My groaning? ... 6 But I am a worm, and no man; A reproach of men, and despised by the people. 7 All those who see Me ridicule Me; They shoot out the lip, they shake the head, saying, ... 12 Many bulls have

surrounded Me; Strong bulls of Bashan have encircled Me. 13 They gape at Me with their mouths, Like a raging and roaring lion. 14 I am poured out like water, And all My bones are out of joint; My heart is like wax; It has melted within Me. ... 16 For dogs have surrounded Me; The congregation of the wicked has enclosed Me. They pierced My hands and My feet; 17 I can count all My bones. They look and stare at Me. 18 They divide My garments among them, And for My clothing they cast lots.

What Messianic prophecies are given in Psalm 22? (Compare to the accounts of Christ's crucifixion and death in Matt. 27; Mark 15; John 19; Luke 23.)

After God *caused a deep sleep to fall on Adam*, God removed a rib from Adam's side.

How was this fulfilled in Christ? What was pierced at the cross and what came out according to John 19:34?

The soldiers pierced His side with a spear, and immediately blood and water came out. The bride of Christ has existed *in the Son* from eternity. The bride's existence and salvation date from "before the foundation of the world" (Eph. 1:4; Rev. 13:8). The bride, however, could not be brought into existence as a separate entity until *after* the Son had been put to sleep and His side opened.

This occurred at Calvary. The Son was put to sleep (the Son died), and His side was opened. Christ was already dead when the Roman soldiers pierced His side and the blood and water supernaturally flowed from His side. And the blood and water are the two elements necessary to bring into existence the bride, separate from the body, but still part of the body (John 19:34).

Once the complete, redeemed bride has been brought into existence through the means which God has provided, the bride will be presented back to the Son, *completing the Son* (regarding a marriage relationship) *and providing completeness* for the bride as well (Heb. 2:10). And God will view the existing union as “*one flesh*” (Eph. 5:26-32).

God’s past work having to do with bringing Eve into existence (Gen. 2:21-24) and His present work (to be completed in the future) having to do with bringing His Son’s bride into existence must be studied in the light of one another.

So how is the blood and water from Christ’s side used to form the bride of Christ? Let’s review what blood and water signifies in Scripture.

Hebrews 9:11-12

*11 But Christ came as High Priest of the good things to come, with the greater and more perfect tabernacle not made with hands, that is, not of this creation. 12 Not with the blood of goats and calves, but **with His own blood** He entered the Most Holy Place once for all, having obtained eternal redemption.*

1 Peter 1:18-19

*18 knowing that you were not redeemed with corruptible things, like silver or gold, from your aimless conduct received by tradition from your fathers, 19 but with **the precious blood of Christ**, as of a lamb without blemish and without spot.*

1 John 1:9

9 If we confess our sins, He is faithful and just to forgive us our sins and to cleanse us from all unrighteousness.

Jesus is currently sitting at the right hand of God the Father making intercession for us as our High Priest. It is His blood on the Mercy Seat in Heaven that cleanses us from sin as we confess our sin. This cleansing blood is available only to those who have become part of His body (part of the Church) through faith in His death as the Passover Lamb.

As we confess our sins, Jesus applies His blood over the mercy seat in the heavenly tabernacle and our sins are cleansed and removed and we are spotless, without blemish in God's eyes after that confession.

Hebrews 10:10

10 By that will we have been sanctified through the offering of the body of Jesus Christ once for all.

Scripture teaches us that without the shedding of Christ's blood, there is no cleansing or remission of our sins.

Hebrews 9:22

22 And according to the law almost all things are purified with blood, and without shedding of blood there is no remission.

All things are purified with His blood and blood is needed for remission (forgiveness) of sin. After Jesus died and blood flowed from His side, what else flowed from His side after He was pierced?

What does water represent according to Ephesians 5:23-32?

Ephesians 5:22-32

*22 Wives, submit to your own husbands, as to the Lord. 23 For the husband is head of the wife, as also Christ is head of the Church; and **He is the Savior of the***

*body. 24 Therefore, just as the Church is subject to Christ, so let the wives be to their own husbands in everything. 25 Husbands, love your wives, just as **Christ also loved the Church and gave Himself for her, 26 that He might sanctify and cleanse her with the washing of water by the word, 27 that He might present her to Himself a glorious church, not having spot or wrinkle or any such thing, but that she should be holy and without blemish. 28 So husbands ought to love their own wives as their own bodies; he who loves his wife loves himself. 29 For no one ever hated his own flesh, but nourishes and cherishes it, just as the Lord does the Church. 30 For we are members of His body, of His flesh and of His bones. 31 "For this reason a man shall leave his father and mother and be joined to his wife, and the two shall become one flesh."** 32 This is a great mystery, but I speak concerning Christ and the Church.*

In this passage, how does Christ **sanctify** (make holy) **and cleanse** His church?

Christians are cleansed by the Word of God. As we read His Word and trust and obey His Words, we are cleansed and transformed. As we study His Word, it is as if we are taking a "spiritual bath", not only cleansing us from our own sins but from the defilements of this present world system under the god of this age.

What is the reason for our cleansing according to v. 27?

It is from the body of Christ, that the Bride for Christ will be built – a Bride **not having spot or wrinkle or any such thing, but that she should be holy and without blemish**. And it will be the Christians who have availed themselves to the washing of the water with the Word (having studied diligently studied it and obeyed it in faith), and who have been forgiven of their sins by the blood of Christ on the Mercy Seat (having continually confessed their sins) who will be found faithful at the Judgment Seat of Christ. These individuals from within the Body of Christ, will be taken out of His Body at the Judgment

Seat of Christ and built into His Bride, and thereby will receive His glory covering when He comes to rule together with His Wife in His coming Kingdom.

Now notice the wording in the first part of v.27 - *that He might **present her to Himself** a glorious church.* Compare this to *Genesis 2:22* –

*Then the rib which the LORD God had taken from man He made into a woman, and **He brought her to the man.***

What similarities do you see?

Just as the woman was formed and presented back to Adam, so will the Bride of Christ be formed at the Judgement Seat of Christ and presented back to Christ as a Bride without blemish.

1 John 5:4-6

*4 For whatever is born of God overcomes the world. And this is the victory that has overcome the world--**our faith.** 5 Who is he who overcomes the world, but he who believes that Jesus is the Son of God? 6 This is He who came by water and blood--Jesus Christ; not only by water, but by water and blood. And it is the Spirit who bears witness, because the Spirit is truth.*

Our faith in Christ and His promises out ahead gives us victory over our three enemies - the world, the flesh and the devil!

Jesus Christ *came by water and blood.* And it is only through His water and blood (poured from His side at Calvary), that we can be fashioned into a Bride without spot or blemish.

So, after the woman was fashioned, she was presented back to the man blameless. Two thousand years ago, Israel as a nation rejected their King (their Messiah) and His Kingdom. Rulership in His heavenly Kingdom was

then offered to the Gentiles and a *new creation in Christ* was created- the church. And from this new creation (the church), the Gentile Bride of Christ would be formed. The Bride will then be presented back to Christ, *blameless*, just as the Woman was presented back to Adam.

Apostle Paul, speaking to the Colossian church, regarding the Gentiles becoming saved, writes the following –

Colossians 1:19-23

19 For it pleased the Father that in Him all the fullness should dwell, 20 and by Him to reconcile all things to Himself, by Him, whether things on earth or things in heaven, having made peace through the blood of His cross. 21 And you, who once were alienated and enemies in your mind by wicked works, yet now He has reconciled 22 in the body of His flesh through death, to present you holy, and blameless, and above reproach in His sight-- 23 if indeed you continue in the faith, grounded and steadfast, and are not moved away from the hope of the gospel which you heard, which was preached to every creature under heaven, of which I, Paul, became a minister.

Just as God formed Adam's body from the dust of the earth at the end of the 6th day, so God will *form* the Body of Christ – the second Man, the last Adam, at the end of the 6th day (the 6,000th year). The resurrection/rapture of the Church will be another gathering of the “dust of the earth” in order to form His Body – the gathering of all Christians throughout the entire dispensation, gathering them to heaven to stand at the Judgment Seat of Christ. Here the Body of Christ will be gathered, and the Bride of Christ will be formed and taken out from the Body of Christ, the Church.

1Thessalonians 4:16-17

16 For the Lord Himself will descend from heaven with a shout, with the voice of an archangel, and with the trumpet of God. And the dead in Christ will rise first. 17 Then we who are alive and remain shall be caught up together with them in the clouds to meet the Lord in the air. And thus we shall always be with the Lord.

Just as God presented back to Adam the one taken out of his body in order for the two to become one and rule over the restored creation, God will present back to the Second Man, the Last Adam, Jesus Christ, the one taken out of His body (the Bride of Christ) in order for the two of them to become One and rule over the restored creation.

Genesis 2:25

And they were both naked, the man and his wife, and were not ashamed.

The word *naked* in this verse means partially naked. Why were they *not ashamed*?

Adam and the woman were naked before the fall but not ashamed. They had an inner garment, covered in glory, but they still lacked the outer garments of splendor and majesty (worn by kings to rule), which would portend the fulfillment of their created purpose to rule.

In order to receive the outer garments of splendor and majesty, they would have to be tested first -obey or disobey God's Word (more on this when we study Gen. 3.).

The Second Man, the Last Adam, Jesus Christ, along with His Bride, will be naked but not ashamed as they will be covered in His glory while awaiting the final redemption of the inheritance at which time they will be restored into their rightful place as Joint -Rulers over the earth.

And the Bride, being covered in Christ's glory will be like Him -

1 John 3:2

2 Beloved, now we are children of God; and it has not yet been revealed what we shall be, but we know that when He is revealed, we shall be like Him, for we shall see Him as He is.

Psalm 104:1-2

1 Bless the LORD, O my soul! O LORD my God, You are very great: You are clothed with honor and majesty, 2 Who cover Yourself with light as with a garment, Who stretch out the heavens like a curtain.

Are you making yourself ready to become the potential Bride of Jesus Christ, to co-reign with the King of kings and Lord of lords? This is the ultimate perfect marriage!

Revelation 19:6-8

*6 And I heard, as it were, the voice of a great multitude, as the sound of many waters and as the sound of mighty thunderings, saying, "Alleluia! For the Lord God Omnipotent reigns! 7 "Let us be glad and rejoice and give Him glory, for the marriage of the Lamb has come, and **His wife has made herself ready.**" 8 **And to her it was granted to be arrayed in fine linen, clean and bright, for the fine linen is the righteous acts of the saints.***

In summary then, Man - male and female, were created in God's image, after God's likeness. They were created to have dominion over the restored creation. The Bride of Christ will consist of Christians that are ready, prepared to meet the Lord. They have been washed in His blood and cleansed in the water of His Word. They have followed His Word in faithful obedience, which are the righteous acts of the Christian that allows that Christian **to be arrayed in fine linen, clean and bright.**

This forms a type of Christ and His Bride who will co-reign as one in His Kingdom out ahead.

I pray this lesson has helped you to see God's great love and plans for man. Keep working on your wedding garment. Be ready to meet your Bridegroom!

Psalm 8:4-6, 9

4 What is man that You are mindful of him, And the son of man that You visit him? 5 For You have made him a little lower than the angels, And You have crowned him with glory and honor. 6 You have made him to have dominion over the works of Your hands; You have put all things under his feet, ... 9 O LORD, our Lord, How excellent is Your name in all the earth!

The Book of Genesis Part 2

Lesson Five – The Lies and Deception of the Old Serpent

Objective of Lesson Five: The lies and deception of the old serpent.

Last lesson we saw that the Passover lamb is a type of Christ. He is the sinless lamb without blemish as described in 1Peter 1:18,19. And according to Exodus 12: 5, 46, the Passover lamb was not to have a bone broken –

Exodus 12:5, 46

*5 'Your lamb shall be without blemish, a male of the first year. You may take it from the sheep or from the goats. ... 46 "In one house it shall be eaten; you shall not carry any of the flesh outside the house, **nor shall you break one of its bones.***

We briefly reviewed Messianic prophecies given in John 19: 36 ,37 and Psalm 34:20 (*He guards all his bones; Not one of them is broken*) and Psalm 22:1,6-7,12-14, and 16-18.

We reviewed Adam and the Woman as a type of Christ and His Bride.

"... Adam was a type of Him Who was to come." Romans 5:14b

In Gen. 2:21-25, man (male and female), was created in God's image, after God's likeness. They were created to have dominion over the restored creation.

God determined that it was not good for the Man to be alone, and He made a helper comparable to have co-dominion with Adam. The word *made* in

Genesis 2:22 means “to build”. God determined that it was not good for His Son, the last Adam, to be alone and He is presently in the process of building a helper comparable to co-reign with the Son in His future Millennial Kingdom!

The Bride of Christ will consist of Christians that are ready, prepared to meet the Lord. They have been washed in His blood and cleansed in the water of His Word. They have followed His Word in faithful obedience, which are the righteous acts of the Christian that allows that Christian *to be arrayed in fine linen, clean and bright*.

And it is Christ and His Bride who will co-reign as one in His Kingdom out ahead.

And we briefly reviewed types and antitypes in Scripture.

A type is something that points to something else; a type can be seen in a person, place, thing, or event in the Bible.

The antitype is the fulfillment of the type.

When looking at the type, the two comparative words “as” and “so” can be used to make the connections. The word “as” is used for the type and the word “so” is used for the antitype. For example:

John 3:14

14 As Moses lifted up the serpent in the wilderness, even so must the Son of Man be lifted up;

In John 3:14, we see that Moses lifting up the serpent is a **type** of the Son of God, Jesus, being lifted up on the cross, which is the **antitype** (i.e., the fulfillment of the type).

The Serpent on the Pole

In Numbers 21: 5-9, we read about Moses lifting the serpent on the pole. The passage has to do with God’s children, the Israelites, murmuring about God’s provision for them as they traveled on their wilderness journey. In particular, they loathed the manna, the heavenly bread (which is a picture of the Word of God and the Bread of life, Jesus Christ; see John 6:31-51).

Numbers 21:5-9

Then they set out from Mount Hor by the way of the Red Sea, to go around the land of Edom; and the people became impatient because of the journey.

The people spoke against God and Moses, “Why have you brought us up out of Egypt to die in the wilderness? For there is no food and no water, and we loathe this miserable food [manna].”

The LORD sent fiery serpents among the people and they bit the people, so that many people of Israel died.

So the people came to Moses and said, “We have sinned, because we have spoken against the LORD and you; intercede with the LORD, that He may remove the serpents from us.” And Moses interceded for the people.

Then the LORD said to Moses, “Make a fiery serpent, and set it on a standard; and it shall come about, that everyone who is bitten, when he looks at it, he will live.” And Moses made a bronze serpent and set it on the standard; and it came about, that if a serpent bit any man, when he looked to the bronze serpent, he lived.

These Israelites were not pagans. They were the redeemed children of God that had appropriated the blood of their Passover lamb and were now to follow God in their wilderness journey. But they did not like God’s leading. They complained and murmured against God provision, God Himself and against Moses. So, God reprimanded His children and sent fiery serpents to bite them and many died.

Then the Israelites realized their sin against God, and they cried out. God tells Moses to make a serpent on a pole and when anyone receives the deadly bite (of sin), they are to look at that serpent on the pole and they will be revived and restored! This serpent on the pole is of course Jesus Christ who willingly took man’s sin upon Himself.

2 Corinthians 5:21

21 He made Him who knew no sin to be sin on our behalf, so that we might become the righteousness of God in Him.

In John 3:14 Jesus says, “**As** Moses lifted up the serpent in the wilderness, **even so** must the Son of Man be lifted up...”

Jesus refers to this passage from Numbers 21, and says He, like the serpent on the pole, must be lifted up on the cross.

If a believer, a redeemed child (as were the Israelites), confesses their sin and looks to the cross, then the blood that poured out of the side of our High Priest Jesus on the cross will cleanse them and heal them. They will not be affected by the bite of our sin at the Judgment Seat of Christ and He will revive us!

So, Numbers 21 and John 3:14 brings us back to 1 John 1:9, which states –

If we [Christians] confess our sins, He [our High Priest, our serpent on the pole] is faithful and just to forgive us our sins [our murmuring, our complaining, our rebellion against God], and to cleanse us [with His blood] from all unrighteousness.

The serpent on the pole is the medical symbol for the World Health Organization. Most people believe the serpent on the pole used in medicine originated from Greek mythology (in particular, the Rod of Asclepius, which has two serpents, not one). But the writings of Moses in Numbers 21, inspired from God, came first and this passage of scripture points to God's restorative healing after confession of sin.

There is also another marriage relationship described in Scripture which should be briefly mentioned – the marriage relationship between God the Father and Israel.

God the Father's wife is Israel and because they have "played the harlot," committing spiritual adultery by assimilating with the gods of this age, God has divorced them.

Jeremiah 3:8a

8 "Then I saw that for all the causes for which backsliding Israel had committed adultery, I had put her away and given her a certificate of divorce..."

Yet, there is a time coming, when God will restore His unfaithful wife and they will be brought back to the Father. This is typified in the Book of Hosea –

Hosea 2:19-20

19 "I will betroth you to Me forever; Yes, I will betroth you to Me In righteousness and justice, In lovingkindness and mercy; 20 I will betroth you to Me in faithfulness, And you shall know the LORD.

For Israel, God's firstborn and God's wife, the persecution which they have endured over the years will intensify during the seven-year tribulation under the antichrist. (This is typified by the three Hebrew children that survived the fiery furnace, Daniel in the lion's den, Israel under Pharaoh, and Esther and Mordecai under Haman's persecution.)

Israel is still God's *portion* and the *pupil* of His eye (Deut. 32:9,10). God's plans, purposes, and promises for His chosen people, Israel, will still come to fruition.

Recall that in the Old Testament, the earthly realm of the Messianic Reign was irrevocably deeded to Abraham's physical descendants (Gen. 15:1,18-21; 2Sam.7). This was an unconditional covenant.

Rulership in a theocracy (theocracy being a state where God rules in the midst of His people) from the **heavenly realm over the earth was conditional** and was contingent upon Israel's faithful obedience –

Exodus 19:3-6

*3 And Moses went up to God, and the LORD called to him from the mountain, saying, "Thus you shall say to the house of Jacob, and tell the children of Israel: 4 'You have seen what I did to the Egyptians, and how I bore you on eagles' wings and brought you to Myself. 5 'Now therefore, **if you will indeed obey My voice and keep My covenant, then you shall be a special treasure to Me above all people; for all the earth is Mine. 6 'And you shall be to Me a kingdom of priests and a holy nation.'** These are the words which you shall speak to the children of Israel."*

As we learned in Gen. Part 1, Israel disobeyed God's Word and they crucified their King two thousand years ago. And because of their disobedience, the heavenly realm of Christ's Kingdom was offered to a new nation, the church –

Matthew 21:43

43 *"Therefore I say to you, the kingdom of God will be taken from you and given to a nation bearing the fruits of it.*

However, after Israel's national repentance at the end of the tribulation, rulership in the **earthly portion of the Kingdom** (unconditional covenant) will be theirs. And they will take the good news concerning Christ, Who rules over the world, to the Gentile nations that still exist upon the earth during the Millennial Kingdom.

Genesis 22:18a

"In your seed all the nations of the earth shall be blessed....

Zechariah 8:20, 22-23

20 *"Thus says the LORD of hosts: 'Peoples shall yet come, Inhabitants of many cities; ... 22 Yes, many peoples and strong nations Shall come to seek the LORD of hosts in Jerusalem, And to pray before the LORD.' 23 "Thus says the LORD of hosts: 'In those days ten men from every language of the nations shall grasp the sleeve of a Jewish man, saying, "Let us go with you, for we have heard that God is with you." ' "*

Isaiah 43:10

10 *"You are My witnesses," says the LORD, "And My servant whom I have chosen, That you may know and believe Me, And understand that I am He. Before Me there was no God formed, Nor shall there be after Me.*

One son (Israel) will carry *the message of life*, which can be found *only in the other Son (Jesus)*. Then, and only then, will the fullness of God's blessings flow out through Israel to the nations of the earth.

Genesis 3:1-7

1 *Now the serpent was more cunning than any beast of the field which the LORD God had made. And he said to the woman, "Has God indeed said, 'You shall not eat of every tree of the garden'?" 2 And the woman said to the serpent, "We may eat the fruit of the trees of the garden; 3 "but of the fruit of the tree which is in the midst of the garden, God has said, 'You shall not eat it, nor shall you touch it,*

lest you die.' " 4 Then the serpent said to the woman, "You will not surely die. 5 "For God knows that in the day you eat of it your eyes will be opened, and you will be like God, knowing good and evil." 6 So when the woman saw that the tree was good for food, that it was pleasant to the eyes, and a tree desirable to make one wise, she took of its fruit and ate. She also gave to her husband with her, and he ate. 7 Then the eyes of both of them were opened, and they knew that they were naked; and they sewed fig leaves together and made themselves coverings.

Who is the serpent and where have we read about him in Scripture?

The bulk of Scripture deals with the 7,000 years within the timeline, with little mention of events in eternity past and eternity future.

In Ezekiel 28:12-18 and Isaiah 14:12-15 we will read about events that occurred in Eternity Past regarding the serpent.

Ezekiel 28:12-18

12 Son of man, take up a lamentation for the king of Tyre, and say to him, 'Thus says the Lord GOD: "You were the seal of perfection, Full of wisdom and perfect in beauty. 13 You were in Eden, the garden of God; Every precious stone was your covering: The sardius, topaz, and diamond, Beryl, onyx, and jasper, Sapphire, turquoise, and emerald with gold. The workmanship of your timbrels and pipes Was prepared for you on the day you were created. 14 "You were the anointed cherub ['Messianic angel'] who covers [rules]; I established you; You were on the holy mountain of God; You walked back and forth in the midst of fiery stones. 15 You were perfect in your ways from the day you were created, Till iniquity was found in you. 16 "By the abundance of your trading You became filled with violence within, And you sinned; Therefore I cast you as a profane thing Out of the mountain of God; And I destroyed you, O covering cherub, From the midst of the fiery stones. 17 "Your heart was lifted up because of your beauty; You corrupted your wisdom for the sake of your splendor; I cast you to the ground, I laid you before kings, That they might gaze at you. 18 "You defiled your sanctuaries By the multitude of your iniquities, By the iniquity of your trading; Therefore I brought fire from your midst; It devoured you, And I turned you to ashes upon the earth In the sight of all who saw you."

In this passage, the King of Tyre spoken to in v. 12ff, typifies the *anointed cherub* [a 'Messianic angel'] who *covers* [rules]. This anointed cherub was Lucifer.

The word *beauty* in v. 12 means *splendor, brightness*.

In v.13 we read "*you were in Eden the garden of God*". Eden (paradise) means place or garden of pleasure or happiness. We can read about another garden of pleasure in Rev. 2:7.

Revelation 2:7

7 "He who has an ear, let him hear what the Spirit says to the churches. To him who overcomes I will give to eat from the tree of life, which is in the midst of the Paradise of God." '

Recall that in both the first and last books of the Bible, and in Ezekiel 28:12-18 of eternity past, we see this garden of Eden (a garden of pleasure, paradise), as a place of rulership. Eden is where we see the man, Adam, and the woman placed in Genesis and they were created to rule or have dominion (Gen. 1:26).

Precious stones are often used for regal attire and Lucifer was covered in precious stones in Eternity Past (v.13).

In v.15 it says, "*You were perfect in your ways from the day you were created...*" until *what* was found in him?

In v.16, *mountain* in scripture denotes Kingdom so mountain of God refers to Kingdom of God.

According to v. 17, what was the cause of Lucifer's heart being *lifted up* or exalted?

Verse 18 says that Lucifer profaned and defiled *his sanctuaries*. The word sanctuary means *sacred place consecrated or holy place*.

Let's read another passage regarding Lucifer's rebellion in Eternity Past. (We have studied this passage before but review is good.)

Isaiah 14:12-15

How you are fallen from heaven, O Lucifer, son of the morning! How you are cut down to the ground, You who weakened the nations! 13 For you have said in your heart: 'I will ascend into heaven, I will exalt my throne above the stars of God; I will also sit on the mount of the congregation On the farthest sides of the north; 14 I will ascend above the heights of the clouds, I will be like the Most High.' 15 Yet you shall be brought down to Sheol, To the lowest depths of the Pit.

What caused the fall of the head cherub, Lucifer, according to the Isaiah 14 passage?

Just as in the Ezekiel passage, power and pride led to Lucifer's downfall. A third of the angels also rebelled against God and fell.

The name *Lucifer* means, "light bearer, shining one, morning star." After the fall he came to be known as *Satan* which means an *opponent, adversary and arch enemy of good*.

Returning to our Ezekiel 28 passage, the consequence for the anointed cherub's rebellion is that his sanctuaries became defiled.

Ezekiel 28:18

18 "You defiled your sanctuaries, By the multitude of your iniquities,..."

Jeremiah 4:23

23 I beheld the earth, and, lo, it was without form, and void; and the heavens, and they had no light.

Lucifer's sanctuaries encompassed the areas over which he was created to cover or rule – the heavens that surround the earth and the earth itself. Due to his rebellion, his sanctuaries **became** defiled, and so, *the earth became without form, and became void* with no order. And it **became** covered with raging waters and darkness.

Then, Genesis 1:2b onward describes the restoration of that which had fallen into ruin through Satan's rebellion. As you can see, this is not a description of the original creation given in v.1, but rather a restoration of the ruined earth and the heavens that surround the earth through six days of work followed by a seventh day of rest.

Revelation 12:9

9 So the great dragon was cast out, that serpent of old, called the Devil and Satan, who deceives the whole world; he was cast to the earth, and his angels were cast out with him.

How is the serpent described in this verse?

The word *old* means *original, that which has been from the beginning*. The original serpent, *serpent of old*, is the serpent we find in Genesis 3, in the Garden at the tree of the knowledge of good and evil.

And as previously mentioned, Satan (Lucifer), was the *original* ruler in eternity past (*Ezekiel 28:12-18*). And Scripture is silent regarding how long Satan reigned in eternity past.

John 14:30

*30 "I will no longer talk much with you, for the **ruler** of this world [age] is coming, and he has nothing in Me.*

How does Jesus describe Satan in this verse?

In this passage, the word *ruler* (Greek word *archaios*) is from the root word that means *original* (Greek word *archē*) used in Rev.12:9. Satan is the ruler of this world or age!

In. Gen. 3:1, what seed did Satan plant in the Woman's mind?

Satan planted the seed of doubt in the woman's mind by questioning God's Word, the only source of truth –
Has God indeed said, 'You shall not eat of every tree of the garden'?

The LORD God did command the man, saying, *"Of every tree of the garden you may freely eat; but of the tree of the knowledge of good and evil you shall not eat, for in the day that you eat of it you shall surely die."*(Gen. 2:16,17)

Genesis. 3:4

Then the serpent said to the woman, "You will not surely die. 5 "For God knows that in the day you eat of it your eyes will be opened, and you will be like God, knowing good and evil.

What is the serpent implying here?

In v.4 we see the serpent calling God a liar and inferring that God is hindering the woman from becoming a god – please catch this. The serpent is implying that God, the woman’s Creator, doesn’t want the best for her!

The word *God* in v5 - *and you will be like God* - is the word *Elohim*, which is a plural form of God (Gen.1:1). The serpent is saying “you will be like God” if you just disobey Him. The word *God* can also mean *gods, rulers, judges*.

Ephesians 6:12

12 For we do not wrestle against flesh and blood, but against principalities, against powers, against the rulers of the darkness of this age, against spiritual hosts of wickedness in the heavenly places.

Who are the current rulers over this age according to this verse?

In addition, *knowing good and evil* refers to judicial authority which is derived only from God. Eating from *the tree of the knowledge of good and evil* was an act of disobedience, an assertion of judicial independence against the Creator, the One True God!

John 8:44

*44 "You are of your father the devil, and the desires of your father you want to do. He was a murderer from the beginning, and does not stand in the truth, because there is no truth in him. When he speaks a lie, he speaks from his own resources, for **he is a liar and the father of it.***

How is the devil (Satan, the serpent) described here?

Satan is the father of lies and he has always desired to be the supreme ruler, even over the One True God (Isa. 14:14).

And as we will see, he is continually and strategically using the same modus operandi – lies and deception - to prevent Christ and His firstborn Sons from ruling in that Day, the Seventh Day Sabbath Rest out ahead. Rulership from the heavens over the earth is what is at stake.

Speaking to the Jewish leaders during Christ's first advent we read –

Matthew 23:13, 33

*13 "But woe to you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! For you **shut up the kingdom of heaven against men**; for you neither go in yourselves, nor do you allow those who are entering to go in. ... 33 "**Serpents, brood of vipers!** How can you escape the condemnation of hell?"*

(Hell is the Greek word *Gehenna*, valley of Hinnom, south of Jerusalem, where the filth and garbage and dead animals of the city were cast out and burned; it is used figuratively as a place of age-lasting judgement.)

How did Jesus describe the scribes and Pharisees in these passages and why did He reprimand them according to v.13?

The Jewish leaders shut up (obstructed) the entrance into the kingdom of the heaven against men. And regrettable, the Christian leaders of today's worldly, and compromising church, are following the same pattern that the Jewish religious leaders followed!

In fact, you rarely hear teaching about "*seeking first His Kingdom and His Righteousness*" and the negative consequences for not obeying this command.

And so then, the serpent, the father of lies, continues to place obstacles into the entrance to Christ's heavenly kingdom. Satan silences the message of rulership in Christ's Kingdom out ahead. He distorts, dilutes, and *snatches* the Word of the Kingdom.

Please read the parable of the sower in Matt. 13:1-9.

In the passage given below, we will study the Lord's explanation of this parable –

Matthew 13:3-23

*3 Then He spoke many things to them in parables, saying: "Behold, a sower went out to sow. 4 "And as he sowed, some seed fell by the wayside; and the birds came and devoured them. 5 "Some fell on stony places, where they did not have much earth; and they immediately sprang up because they had no depth of earth. 6 "But when the sun was up they were scorched, and because they had no root they withered away. 7 "And some fell among thorns, and the thorns sprang up and choked them. 8 "But others fell on good ground and yielded a crop: some a hundredfold, some sixty, some thirty. 9 "He who has ears to hear, let him hear!" 10 And the disciples came and said to Him, "Why do You speak to them in parables?" 11 He answered and said to them, "Because it has been given to you to know the **mysteries of the kingdom of heaven**, but to them it has not been given. 12 "For whoever has, to him more will be given, and he will have abundance; but whoever does not have, even what he has will be taken away from him. 13 "Therefore I speak to them in parables, because seeing they do not see, and hearing they do not hear, nor do they understand. 14 "And in them the prophecy of Isaiah is fulfilled, which says: 'Hearing you will hear and shall not understand, And seeing you will see and not perceive; 15 For the hearts of this people have grown dull. Their ears are hard of hearing, And their eyes they have closed, Lest they should see with their eyes and hear with their ears, Lest they should understand with their hearts and turn, So that I should heal them.' 16 "But blessed are your eyes for they see, and your ears for they hear; 17 "for assuredly, I say to you that many prophets and righteous men desired to see what you see, and did not see it, and to hear what you hear, and did not hear it. 18 "Therefore hear the parable of the sower: 19 "**When anyone hears the word of the kingdom, and does not understand it, then the wicked one comes and snatches [seizes] away what was sown in his heart.** This is he who received seed by the wayside. 20 "But he who received the seed on stony places,*

*this is he who hears the word and immediately receives it with joy; 21 "yet he has no root in himself, but endures only for a while. For when tribulation or persecution arises because of the word, immediately he stumbles. 22 "Now he who received seed among the thorns is he who hears the word, and the cares of this world and the deceitfulness of riches choke the word, and he becomes unfruitful. 23 "But he who received seed on the good ground is he who **hears the word and understands it**, who indeed bears fruit and produces: some a hundredfold, some sixty, some thirty."*

Why did the Lord speak in parables according to vv. 13-16?

A parable is a comparison of one thing with another. They are often earthly stories with heavenly meaning. It is a narrative by which either the duties of men or the things of God, particularly the nature and history of God's Kingdom, are figuratively portrayed.

What was given to the disciples to know according to v. 11?

What is the seed according to v. 19 and who snatches it away?

The *wicked one* is Satan, the old serpent. The seed is the Word of the Kingdom
–
"...Because it has been given to you to know the **mysteries of the kingdom of heaven** v.11

*"When anyone hears **the word of the kingdom**, and does not understand it, then the wicked one comes and snatches [seizes] away what was sown in his heart. V.19*

The one *who hears the word of the kingdom, and **does not understand***, has this kingdom message snatched (seized) by Satan. Here we can see the importance of gaining understanding.

Proverbs 9:10

*10 "The fear of the LORD is the beginning of **wisdom**, And the knowledge of the Holy One is **understanding**.*

Proverbs 4:5, 7

*5 Get wisdom! Get understanding! **Do not forget, nor turn away from the words of my mouth.** ... 7 Wisdom is the principal thing; Therefore **get wisdom.** And in all your getting, **get understanding.***

According to Proverbs 4:5, how do we get wisdom and understanding?

So then, if an individual *hears the word of the kingdom, and **does not understand***, the Word of the Kingdom will be snatched away. And understanding, regarding this message, is given by **remembering** (*do not forget*) what God's Word says concerning Christ's return as King of Kings and rulership in that Day, *do not forget the things we have heard, lest we drift away.*" (Heb. 2:1)

Paul, speaking to the church in Rome writes
So, then faith comes by hearing, and hearing by the word of God (Rom. 10:17).

Faith, our initial faith when we put faith in Christ, **and** faith to the saving of our soul (which is the *prize of the upward calling* which Paul speaks about in

Phl. 3:14), *comes by hearing* His Word of the Kingdom. And the more we study this vital message, and “***seek first His Kingdom,***” the more we will *get understanding* thereby allowing the Word of His Kingdom to be implanted in our heart and bear fruit –

*Mat.13:23 "But he who received seed on the good ground is he who **hears the word and understands it,** who indeed bears fruit...*

Also, from the verses in Proverbs, we *get understanding* by not turning away from the Lord’s words. As we have learned in our Gen. Part 1 study, the Word of His coming Kingdom is given in the first thirty-four verses of Genesis. This message is the main theme of Scripture. All of Scripture moves toward that Seventh Day, the Sabbath Day, the rest out ahead when Christ will restore all things, praise God!

We should not drift away (turn away) or walk away from this truth. Be on guard, as Satan can even use Christian associates to draw us away from this truth.

“Therefore we must give the more earnest heed to the things we have heard, lest we drift away.” Hebrews 2:1

Please read (and reread) Hebrews chapters 1,2 for a greater understanding of God’s plans for man. We will be discussing this in our next lesson.

Regarding the parable of the sower, please describe the outcome for the one whose seed *fell on stony places*, and whose *seed fell among the thorns*. How is the one *who received seed on the good ground* described in v.23?

James 1:21

21 Therefore lay aside all filthiness and overflow of wickedness, and receive with meekness the implanted word, which is able to save your souls.

In the parable of the sower, the seed is the *word of the kingdom*(vs.18). What is the implanted word, the *word of the kingdom*, able to do according to James 1:21?

This salvation, the salvation of the soul, is *so great a salvation*.

Hebrews 2:1, 3

*1 Therefore we must give the more earnest heed to the things we have heard, lest we drift away. ... 3 how shall we escape if we neglect **so great a salvation**, which at the first began to be spoken by the Lord, and was confirmed to us by those who heard Him,*

The salvation of our soul is the *prize of the upward calling*, rulership with Christ in His Kingdom as His *joint heir* and *Bride*, in all of His glory. You don't want to miss this!

And in that Day, should we be found faithful like the one *who received seed on the good ground*, the serpent (viper), shall *not hurt nor destroy* us in Christ's holy and glorious mountain, His Kingdom out ahead –

Isaiah 11:1-2, 5-6, 8-10

*1 There shall come forth a Rod from the stem of Jesse, And a Branch shall grow out of his roots. 2 The Spirit of the LORD shall rest upon Him, The Spirit of wisdom and understanding, The Spirit of counsel and might, The Spirit of knowledge and of the fear of the LORD. ... 5 Righteousness shall be the belt of His loins, And faithfulness the belt of His waist. 6 "The wolf also shall dwell with the lamb, The leopard shall lie down with the young goat, The calf and the young lion and the fatling together; And a little child shall lead them. ... 8 **The nursing child shall play by the cobra's hole, And the weaned child shall put his hand in the viper's den. 9 They shall not hurt nor destroy in all My holy mountain, For the earth shall be full of the knowledge of the LORD As the waters cover the sea. 10 "And in that day there shall be a Root of Jesse, Who shall stand as a banner to the people; For the Gentiles shall seek Him, **And His resting place shall be glorious.**"***

The Book of Genesis Part 2

Lesson Six – The Fall, Redemption and Walking with God

Objective of Lesson Six: The fall, redemption and walking with God in the Garden.

In our previous lesson, we learned about the serpent in eternity past, where he ruled as the anointed cherub. Angelic beings were created to rule in eternity past and Scripture is silent regarding how long this period of time existed. After Lucifer's rebellion, God restored the earth and the sanctuaries associated with it and Adam and the woman were created to rule over God's restored creation.

And we learned that Satan planted the seed of doubt in the woman's mind by questioning God's Word, the only source of truth –

Has God indeed said, 'You shall not eat of every tree of the garden'?

The LORD God did indeed command the man, saying, *"Of every tree of the garden you may freely eat; but of the tree of the knowledge of good and evil you shall not eat, for in the day that you eat of it you shall surely die."*(Gen. 2:16,17)

Genesis. 3:4

Then the serpent said to the woman, "You will not surely die. 5 "For God knows that in the day you eat of it your eyes will be opened, and you will be like God, knowing good and evil.

In Gen. 3:4, we see the serpent calling God a liar and inferring that God is hindering the woman from becoming a god. And we know that God is Truth and that He has provided everything for man to be like His Son in that coming Day!

"To him who overcomes I will grant to sit with Me on My throne, as I also overcame and sat down with My Father on His throne." Rev 3:21

Philippians 4:19

19 And my God shall supply all your need according to His riches in glory by Christ Jesus.

2Peter 3:9

9 The Lord is not slack concerning His promise, as some count slackness, but is longsuffering toward us, not willing that any should perish but that all should come to repentance.

Satan is the father of lies and he is continually and strategically using the same modus operandi – lies and deception - to prevent Christ and His firstborn Sons from ruling in that Day, the Seventh Day Sabbath Rest out ahead. Rulership from the heavens over the earth is what is at stake.

The serpent continues to place obstacles into the entrance of Christ's heavenly kingdom.

Satan silences the message of rulership in Christ's Kingdom out ahead. He distorts, dilutes, and *snatches* the Word of the Kingdom as pictured in the parable of the sower (Mat.13:3-23).

In Mat. 13:19 we read *"When anyone hears **the word of the kingdom**, and does not understand it, then the wicked one comes and snatches [seizes] away what was sown in his heart. This is he who received seed by the wayside.*

We learned the importance of understanding the Word of God. Rightly dividing God's Word will give us a correct understanding.

According to Prov. 4:5, **understanding**, regarding this message, is given by **remembering** (*do not forget*) what God's Word says concerning Christ's return as King of Kings and rulership in that Day!

And finally, we learned that according to Proverbs 4:7, we *get understanding* by not turning away from the Lord's words. As we have learned in our Gen. Part 1 study, the Word of His coming Kingdom is given in the first thirty-four

verses of Genesis. This message is the main theme of Scripture. All of Scripture moves toward that Seventh Day, the Sabbath Day, the rest out ahead when Christ will restore all things, praise God! We should not drift away (turn away) or walk away from this truth.

Last lesson you were encouraged to read the first 2 chapters of Hebrews. We will just review a few of the verses from these powerful chapters of Scripture.

The verses in chapter 1 give seven Old Testament quotations, all of which are dealing with the future Day of Christ's Kingdom and the change of rulership that will take place in the Messianic era. Seven is the number of completion and seven points to the Seventh Day Sabbath Rest out ahead. The verses show us the fulfillment of the promises given to Abraham and his seed in that Day, the 7th Day Sabbath rest out ahead.

Hebrews 1:1-14

*1 God, who at various times and in various ways spoke in time past to the fathers by the prophets, 2 has **in these last days** spoken to us by His Son, whom He has appointed heir of all things, through whom also He made the worlds; 3 who being the brightness of His glory and the express image of His person, and **upholding** all things by the word of His power, when He had by Himself purged our sins, sat down at the right hand of the Majesty on high, 4 having become so much better than the angels, as He has by inheritance obtained a more excellent name than they. 5 For to which of the angels did He ever say: "You are My Son, Today I have begotten You"? And again: "I will be to Him a Father, And He shall be to Me a Son"? [Psalm 2:7] 6 But when He again brings the firstborn into the world, He says: "Let all the angels of God worship Him." [Psalm 97:1-9] 7 And of the angels He says: "Who makes His angels spirits And His ministers a flame of fire." [Psalm 104:4] 8 But to the Son He says: "Your throne, O God, is forever and ever; A scepter of righteousness is the scepter of Your kingdom. [Psalm 45:6,7] 9 You have loved righteousness and hated lawlessness; Therefore God, Your God, has anointed You With the oil of gladness more than Your companions." 10 And: "You, LORD, in the beginning laid the foundation of the earth, And the heavens are the work of Your hands. [Psalm 102:25-28] 11 They will perish, but You remain; And they will all grow old like a garment; 12 Like a cloak You will fold them up, And they will be changed. But You are the same, And Your years will not fail." 13 But to which of the angels has He ever said: "Sit at My right hand,*

*Till I make Your enemies Your footstool"? [Psalm 110:1] 14 Are they not all ministering spirits sent forth to minister **for those who will inherit salvation?** [Psalm 34:7]*

What type of salvation does Heb. 1:14 refer to?

The present world system is ruled over by Satan and his fallen angels, but the One appointed *heir of all things*, has through inheritance *obtained a more excellent name than they*. Christ is the One who will bring about the change in rulership with respect to the earth. This then is the purpose of God's great redemptive plan set in place from the beginning.

Angels have ruled over this one province in God's universal Kingdom from ages past, even though those angels have forfeited the right to rule because of rebellion.

As we learned in our previous lesson, the subsequent deception in the Garden continues until the Son returns and establishes His glorious Kingdom.

In that Day, when God *again brings the firstborn into the world*, the angels will then worship Christ, and minister on His behalf in the administration of His Kingdom. Recall that the firstborn Sons in Scripture are Christ, His Bride from the Church, and Israel.

Currently, we are lower than the angels now but in His coming Kingdom, we will be higher than the angels and they will still minister to us (Heb. 1:14).

Hebrews 2:1-3, 5-7, 10, 14

1 Therefore we must give the more earnest heed to the things we have heard, lest we drift away. 2 For if the word spoken through angels proved steadfast, and every transgression and disobedience received a just reward, 3 how shall we escape if we neglect so great a salvation, which at the first began to be spoken by the Lord, and was confirmed to us by those who heard Him, ... 5 For He has not put the world to come, of which we speak, in subjection to angels. 6 But one testified in a certain place, saying: "What is man that You are mindful of him, Or the son of man that You take care of him? 7 You have made him a

little lower than the angels; You have crowned him with glory and honor, And set him over the works of Your hands. ... 10 For it was fitting for Him, for whom are all things and by whom are all things, in bringing many sons to glory, to make the captain of their salvation perfect through sufferings. ... 14 Inasmuch then as the children have partaken of flesh and blood, He Himself likewise shared in the same, that through death He might destroy him who had the power of death, that is, the devil,

Referring to the word *therefore* in v.1, why must we *give the more earnest heed to the things we have heard* (things we have heard regarding His Kingdom out ahead)?

The word *therefore* refers to the verses given in the prior chapter, Hebrews chapter 1 and it stresses the importance of these verses. As we just learned, in Hebrews 1, seven Old Testament quotations are given, all of which are dealing with the future Day of Christ's Kingdom and the change of rulership that will take place in the Messianic era. The verses show us the fulfillment of the promises given to Abraham and his seed in that Day, the 7th Day Sabbath rest out ahead. *Therefore we must give the more earnest heed to the things we have heard, lest we drift away...*

Who did God *put the world to come* in subjection to according to v. 7?

"What is man that You are mindful of him, Or the son of man that You take care of him?" We know that God has established that man should rule and have dominion over His creation (Gen. 1:26) yet it still is amazing to see, with spiritual eyes, the immensity of this Kingdom message and God's plans for man!

And those Christians in pursuit of the Kingdom, desiring to one day be the Bride of Christ, are the very ones targeted for deception, just as Satan targeted the Woman in the Garden.

The old serpent knows that Christ cannot remove the crown from his (Satan's) head until He has a Bride to redeem the inheritance for, as *it is not good that the Man should be alone (Gen. 2:18)*.

The old serpent blinds many from this message and leads many astray, just as he did in the Garden. Do not let him deceive you, *lest you drift away* and miss the prize of the upward calling –

Philippians 3:13-14, 20-21

13 Brethren, I do not count myself to have apprehended; but one thing I do, forgetting those things which are behind and reaching forward to those things which are ahead, 14 I press toward the goal for the prize of the upward call of God in Christ Jesus. ... 20 For our citizenship is in heaven, from which we also eagerly wait for the Savior, the Lord Jesus Christ, 21 who will transform our lowly body that it may be conformed to His glorious body, according to the working by which He is able even to subdue all things to Himself.

Genesis 3:6-13

6 So when the woman saw that the tree was good for food, that it was pleasant to the eyes, and a tree desirable to make one wise, she took of its fruit and ate. She also gave to her husband with her, and he ate. 7 Then the eyes of both of them were opened, and they knew that they were naked; and they sewed fig leaves together and made themselves coverings. 8 And they heard the sound of the LORD God walking in the garden in the cool of the day, and Adam and his wife hid themselves from the presence of the LORD God among the trees of the garden. 9 Then the LORD God called to Adam and said to him, "Where are you?" 10 So he said, "I heard Your voice in the garden, and I was afraid because I was naked; and I hid myself." 11 And He said, "Who told you that you were naked? Have you eaten from the tree of which I commanded you that you should not eat?" 12 Then the man said, "The woman whom You gave to be with me, she gave me of the tree, and I ate." 13 And the LORD God said to the woman, "What is this you have done?" The woman said, "The serpent deceived me, and I ate."

1John 2:16

16 For all that is in the world--the lust of the flesh, the lust of the eyes, and the pride of life--is not of the Father but is of the world.

How did the woman's actions in Gen.3:6 disregard the vs. above?

The woman's fleshly actions demonstrated in Gen. 3:6 describe actions emanating from *the lust of the flesh, the lust of the eyes, and the pride of life (you will be like gods; a tree desirable to make one wise)*.

Once the woman ate the forbidden fruit, what followed according to vs. 6?

Notice the phrase *gave to her husband with her, and he ate*. The word *gave* means *to put, put upon, ascribe, bestow, pay wages*. Did the man willingly eat the fruit and allow the woman to *put upon* himself the sin? And can you recall who willingly took sin upon Himself?

Recall that the first Adam is a *type of Him* [Christ] *who was to come* (Rom. 5:14). Adam was not deceived but knew exactly what he was doing, as he forms a type of Christ who became sin for us.

2Corinthians 5:21

21 For He made Him who knew no sin to be sin for us, that we might become the righteousness of God in Him.

God had established that Adam and the woman were to rule together (the two as one) over a restored creation in a marriage relationship.

Genesis 1:26

*26 Then God said, "Let Us make man in Our image, according to Our likeness; let **them** have dominion..."*

Adam realized that without his wife, he would be unable to rule.

Genesis 2:18, 22-24

*18 And the LORD God said, "It is **not good that man should be alone; I will make him a helper comparable to him.**" ... 22 Then the rib which the LORD God had taken from man He made into a woman, and **He brought her to the man.** 23 And Adam said: "This is now bone of my bones And flesh of my flesh; She shall be called Woman, Because she was taken out of Man." 24 Therefore a man shall leave his father and mother and be **joined to his wife, and they shall become one flesh.***

God formed a helpmeet for the man, whom He called *Woman*, because *she was taken out of Man*. The woman was *bone of man's bones, and flesh of man's flesh* and she was presented back to the man. The woman, because she was a part of the man's very being, completed the man and the man could not rule as an incomplete being.

The man and the woman were *to rule together*. This is an unchangeable first mention principle which God established in the beginning – **the man could not rule alone. He must rule as a complete being in a marriage relationship with his helpmeet, his bride.**

In the antitype, Christ, the Second Man, the Last Adam, will one day take the scepter and rule the earth. And God's established principle concerning man's rule cannot be changed. Christ, at the time He rules the earth, must have a wife to rule with Him.

In this current dispensation of the church, God has sent the Holy Spirit into the world to acquire a bride for His Son (seen typically in Gen. 24).

And once this is completed, the bride will be removed from the earth and presented to the Son (as seen in the type given in Gen. 24). The two will be one and the Second Man, the Last Adam, will take the scepter and rule the earth in a marriage relationship, in complete agreement with God's original plan for man.

Romans 8:16-17

*16 The Spirit Himself bears witness with our spirit that we are children of God, 17 and if children, then heirs--heirs of God and **joint heirs** [joint participants in rulership] with Christ, **if indeed we suffer with Him, that we may also be glorified together.***

According to v. 17, what is the criteria needed to become a *joint heir* and to be *glorified together* with Christ?

Adam was not deceived. He **willingly** partook of the tree of the knowledge of good and evil following Eve partaking of this tree.

1Timothy 2:14

*14 And **Adam was not deceived**, but the woman being deceived, fell into transgression.*

Now let's reexamine the type/antitype with Adam as the *type of Him who was to come*. When Christ (who *knew no sin*, was made *sin for us*) first found His potential bride, she was in the same condition in which Adam found the woman! Before we trusted in Christ, we were spiritually *dead in our trespasses and sins* (Eph. 2:1) and as Gentiles, we were aliens from the promises –

Ephesians 2:12

12 that at that time you were without Christ, being aliens from the commonwealth of Israel and strangers from the covenants of promise, having no hope and without God in the world.

1Peter 2:24

24 who Himself bore our sins in His own body on the tree, that we, having died to sins, might live for righteousness--by whose stripes you were healed.

Galatians 1:3-4

3 Grace to you and peace from God the Father and our Lord Jesus Christ, 4 who gave Himself for our sins, that He might deliver us from this present evil age, according to the will of our God and Father,

Why did the second Adam, give *Himself for our sins*? Can you see why the first Adam willingly sinned?

After the woman had eaten of the forbidden fruit, she was no longer able to rule with Adam and Adam was unable to rule apart from the woman. Consequently, Adam could not have fulfilled the purpose for his creation had he not acted just as he did.

Adam acted with a view to **Eve's redemption**, in order that he, as a complete being (Adam, with Eve), might one day fulfill the purpose for man's creation. And neither can Christ, the second Man, the last Adam, rule apart from a wife. He Who knew no sin was made *sin for us*, with a view to both Christ and a **redeemed wife** (the Bride taken from the Church) one day taking the scepter and ascending the throne together.

And because of sin, Adam and the woman became disqualified to rule before ever taking the scepter of rulership, leaving the incumbent, Satan, as the ruler of this world (Eph. 6:12).

1John 5:19

19 We know that we are of God, and the whole world lies under the sway of the wicked one.

According to Gen. 3:7, what three events occurred after Adam and the woman sinned?

After the fall, the eyes of both of them were opened, and they knew that they were naked; and they sewed fig leaves together and made themselves coverings.

Recall that the word *naked* in Gen. 3:7 means *utterly naked and helpless* (Hebrew word *erom*) whereas the word *naked* in Gen. 2:25 means partially naked (Hebrew word *arom*) –

And they were both naked, the man and his wife, and were not ashamed.

Before the fall, Adam and the woman were only partially naked, and they were not ashamed as they had a glory covering.

Adam and the Woman were created in the image and likeness of God and God is covered in a garment of light, the light of His glory and He is clothed with honor and majesty!

Psalm 104:1-2

1 Bless the LORD, O my soul! O LORD my God, You are very great: You are clothed with honor and majesty, 2 Who cover Yourself with light as with a garment, Who stretch out the heavens like a curtain.

Adam and the Woman were created to rule and created in the image and likeness of God. However, although they had a covering of pristine glory light in preparation for rulership, they were not yet clothed with honor and

majesty, the clothes associated with Regality and rulership. They had to be tested first.

After they sinned and ate from the tree of the knowledge of good and evil, they were separated from God's purpose for them which was rulership (dominion) over His restored creation. And so, the pristine covering of glory, the garment of light, the precursor to being clothed with honor and majesty, was gone and they were totally naked.

Once they realized what they had lost, they attempted to cover themselves with fig leaves. Man's attempts of working toward spiritual redemption always fail and with the loss of the glory covering, fig leaves could not atone for their sin or cover their shame. And so, they hid themselves from the Lord (which is also futile exercise).

In Scripture, a fig tree that produces only fig leaves without fruit, often points to Israel's barrenness to produce fruit (spiritual fruit) due to their disobedience.

Hosea 9:10, 17

10 "I found Israel Like grapes in the wilderness; I saw your fathers As the firstfruits on the fig tree in its first season. But they went to Baal Peor, And separated themselves to that shame; They became an abomination like the thing they loved. ... 17 My God will cast them away, Because they did not obey Him; And they shall be wanderers among the nations.

Jeremiah, the weeping prophet was sent by God to warn Israel of impending judgment for their disobedience –

Jeremiah 8:5-6, 13

*5 Why has this people slidden back, Jerusalem, in a perpetual backsliding? They hold fast to deceit, They refuse to return. 6 I listened and heard, But they do not speak aright. No man repented of his wickedness, Saying, 'What have I done?' Everyone turned to his own course, As the horse rushes into the battle. ... 13 "I will surely consume them," says the LORD. "No grapes shall be on the vine, **Nor***

figs on the fig tree, And the leaf shall fade; And the things I have given them shall pass away from them." ' "

In this passage, Israel is typified as a fruitless fig tree. Why were there no figs on the fig tree?

Luke 13:6-9

*6 He also spoke this parable: "A certain man had a fig tree planted in his vineyard, and **he came seeking fruit on it and found none.** 7 "Then he said to the keeper of his vineyard, 'Look, for three years I have come seeking fruit on this fig tree and find none. Cut it down; why does it use up the ground?' 8 "But he answered and said to him, 'Sir, let it alone this year also, until I dig around it and fertilize it. 9 'And if it bears fruit, well. But if not, after that you can cut it down.'"*

In this passage, the three years refers to Christ's ministry during His first advent, when He proclaimed, to the nation of Israel, the message of repentance – "*repent, for the Kingdom of God is at hand.*" The phrase *let it alone this year* refers to the time period when the reoffer of the Kingdom was given to the nation of Israel after the Lord's crucifixion.

Mark 11:13-14

13 And seeing from afar a fig tree having leaves, He went to see if perhaps He would find something on it. When He came to it, He found nothing but leaves, for it was not the season for figs. 14 In response Jesus said to it, "Let no one eat fruit from you ever again." And His disciples heard it.

When Jesus came to earth two thousand years ago, He came first to the House of Israel, His redeemed children, with the message of repentance, *for the Kingdom of God was at hand.*

Due to Israel's years of disobedience, the Lord found no spiritual fruit on the fig tree, with the fig tree representing the nation of Israel.

(Note that the phrase *Let no one eat fruit from you ever again*, refers to this age, this time period, the Church dispensation. In the age to come, the Millennial reign of Christ, Israel will bear fruit and they will be God's witnesses to the gentile nations. This is typified by Abraham and his wife Keturah with father Abraham as a type of God the Father remarrying His wife Israel. And in the age to come, Israel will bear fruit as did Keturah. See Gen.25:1)

Fig leaves then represent a state of fruitlessness and this is what the man and the woman tried to cover themselves with, fig leaves which would bear no spiritual fruit (redemption) for them.

And in subsequent lessons, we will see that God requires a substitute death and shed blood for redemption. This is what Adam and the woman needed.

Genesis 3:8

And they heard the sound of the LORD God walking in the garden in the cool of the day, and Adam and his wife hid themselves from the presence of the LORD God among the trees of the garden.

After their fall, Adam and the woman *heard the sound of God walking in the garden.*

The word *sound* is from an unused root meaning to *call aloud; a voice or sound; God's voice or thunders.*

Before the fall, God desired to walk in the Garden and fellowship with Adam and the woman.

Can you think of any individuals in the Old Testament that walked with God?

Genesis 5:24

24 And Enoch walked with God; and he was not, for God took him.

Genesis 6:9

9 This is the genealogy of Noah. Noah was a just man, perfect in his generations. Noah walked with God.

Genesis 48:15

15 And he [Jacob who is called Israel in this verse] blessed Joseph, and said: "God, before whom my fathers Abraham and Isaac walked, The God who has fed me all my life long to this day,

1Kings 3:14

14 "So if you walk in My ways, to keep My statutes and My commandments, as your father David walked, then I will lengthen your days."

For Christians, we can either choose to walk with God, in the Light of His Word, or we can choose to sin and walk in darkness, away from His Light.

1John 2:6

6 He who says he abides in Him ought himself also to walk just as He walked.

God desires to fellowship with us and walk with us.

Revelation 3:20-22

*20 "Behold, I stand at the door and knock. **If anyone hears My voice and opens the door, I will come in to him and dine with him, and he with Me.** 21 "To him who overcomes I will grant to sit with Me on My throne, as I also overcame and sat down with My Father on His throne. 22 "He who has an ear, let him hear what the Spirit says to the churches." ' "*

And God will also restore and remove all sin from His people, Israel, in that Day, the 7th Day Sabbath rest and they will walk with God and follow His footsteps –

Psalm 85:1-2, 12-13

...LORD, You have been favorable to Your land; You have brought back the captivity of Jacob. 2 You have forgiven the iniquity of Your people; You have covered all their sin. Selah ... 12 Yes, the LORD will give what is good; And our land will yield its increase. 13 Righteousness will go before Him, And shall make His footsteps our pathway.

There is another interesting point regarding Gen. 3:8 - *And they heard the sound of the **LORD God walking in the garden...***

In Old Testament Scripture, to walk on land symbolized that an individual possessed that land or had authority over the land they walked on.

Genesis 13:14-17

14 And the LORD said to Abram, after Lot had separated from him: "Lift your eyes now and look from the place where you are--northward, southward, eastward, and westward; 15 "for all the land which you see I give to you and your descendants forever. 16 "And I will make your descendants as the dust of the earth; so that if a man could number the dust of the earth, then your descendants also could be numbered. 17 "Arise, walk in the land through its length and its width, for I give it to you."

In v.17, what did God tell Abraham to do to confirm Abraham's possession over the land?

We can read about the same principle when Moses addressed the children of Israel before his death and when the Lord addressed Joshua.

Deuteronomy 11:24-25

24 "Every place on which the sole of your foot treads shall be yours: from the wilderness and Lebanon, from the river, the River Euphrates, even to the Western Sea, shall be your territory. 25 "No man shall be able to stand against you; the LORD your God will put the dread of you and the fear of you upon all the land where you tread, just as He has said to you.

Joshua 1:1-4

1 After the death of Moses the servant of the LORD, it came to pass that the LORD spoke to Joshua the son of Nun, Moses' assistant, saying: 2 "Moses My servant is dead. Now therefore, arise, go over this Jordan, you and all this people, to the land which I am giving to them--the children of Israel. 3 "Every place that the sole of your foot will tread upon I have given you, as I said to Moses. 4 "From the wilderness and this Lebanon as far as the great river, the River Euphrates, all the land of the Hittites, and to the Great Sea toward the going down of the sun, shall be your territory.

The Lord God has jurisdiction and authority over the land, the creation, and the Garden or Paradise. Recall that in both the first and last books of the Bible, and in Ezekiel 28:12-18 of eternity past, we see this garden of Eden (a garden of pleasure, paradise), as a place of rulership. Eden is where we see the man, Adam, and the woman placed in Genesis and they were created to rule or have dominion (Gen. 1:26).

Ephesians 6:12

For we do not wrestle against flesh and blood, but against principalities, against powers, against the rulers of the darkness of this age, against spiritual hosts of wickedness in the heavenly places.

Job 1:6,7

*6 Now there was a day when the sons of God came to present themselves before the LORD, and Satan also came among them. 7 And the LORD said to Satan, "From where do you come?" So, Satan answered the LORD and said, "**From going to and fro on the earth, and from walking back and forth on it.**"*

According to the passages above, who is currently in the place of rulership from the heavens over the earth?

Currently, due to the fall of man, Satan and his angels have possession over the land and are **walking back and forth on it**. They rule from the heavens over the earth. However, in **that Day**, the Seventh Day Sabbath Rest, the 1000-year Reign of Christ, God will restore all things, including rulership from the heavens over the earth.

In Gen. 3:8 we read *they heard the sound of the LORD God walking in the garden in the **cool** of the day.*

The word **cool** is the Hebrew word *ruah* which means *Spirit, wind, breath*. It is the same word used in Gen. 1:2 –

*2 The earth was without form, and void; and darkness was on the face of the deep. And the **Spirit** of God was hovering over the face of the waters.*

After judgment comes restoration. God was walking in the Spirit (cool) of the day. As we studied in Gen. part 1, God's Spirit begins the process of restoration (Gen. 2:2). The Lord, being omniscient, already knew that the Adam and the woman had sinned, and God's Spirit would begin the process of restoring them. But remember, restoration occurs **after** the judgment so perhaps we can also see that the phrase **cool of the day**, points to eschatological judgment in the "spirit" of the "day of the Lord"

Joel 1:15

Alas for the day! for the day of the LORD is at hand, and as a destruction from the Almighty shall it come.

And what occurs after the judgment that will transpire during the tribulation period? Restoration –

The phrase *Spirit of the day* points to a time yet future, the times of refreshing in that **Day**, the Sabbath Day out ahead, when God will restore all things. And this restoration occurs after the judgment.

God was walking in the Spirit (cool) of **the day**. In the New Testament, can you remember who was transported forward in time to that **Day, the Lord's Day**?

Revelation 1:9-15, 18-20

9 I, John, both your brother and companion in the tribulation and kingdom and patience of Jesus Christ, was on the island that is called Patmos for the word of God and for the testimony of Jesus Christ. 10 I was in the Spirit on the Lord's Day, and I heard behind me a loud voice, as of a trumpet, 11 saying, "I am the Alpha and the Omega, the First and the Last," and, "What you see, write in a book and send it to the seven churches which are in Asia: to Ephesus, to Smyrna, to Pergamos, to Thyatira, to Sardis, to Philadelphia, and to Laodicea." 12 Then I turned to see the voice that spoke with me. And having turned I saw seven golden lampstands, 13 and in the midst of the seven lampstands One like the Son of Man, clothed with a garment down to the feet and girded about the chest with a golden band. 14 His head and hair were white like wool, as white as snow, and His eyes like a flame of fire; 15 His feet were like fine brass, as if refined in a furnace, and His voice as the sound of many waters; ... 18 "I am He who lives, and was dead, and behold, I am alive forevermore. Amen. And I have the keys of Hades and of Death. 19 "Write the things which you have seen, and the things which are, and the things which will take place after this. 20 "The mystery of the seven stars which you saw in My right hand, and the seven golden lampstands: The seven stars are the angels of the seven churches, and the seven lampstands which you saw are the seven churches.

And so, we can see that God does indeed tell *the end from the beginning* in the Book of Beginnings, the Book of Genesis –

Isaiah 46:9-10

9 Remember the former things of old, For I am God, and there is no other; I am God, and there is none like Me, 10 Declaring the end from the beginning, And from ancient times things that are not yet done, Saying, 'My counsel shall stand, And I will do all My pleasure,'

We will end our lesson here.

Let us strive to walk in the Garden with our Lord, in that Day!

The Book of Genesis Part 2

Lesson Seven – Salvation of the Spirit, Soul, and Body

| |
|--|
| Objective of Lesson Seven: Salvation of the Spirit, Soul, and Body |
|--|

Last lesson we learned that after Adam and the woman sinned and ate from the tree of the knowledge of good and evil, they were separated from God's purpose for them which was rulership (dominion) over His restored creation. And so, the pristine covering of glory, the garment of light, the precursor to being clothed with honor and majesty, was gone and they were totally naked.

Once they realized what they had lost, they attempted to cover themselves with fig leaves. Man's attempts of working toward spiritual redemption always fail and with the loss of the glory covering, fig leaves could not atone for their sin or cover their shame. And so, they hid themselves from the Lord (which is also futile exercise).

Adam was not deceived. He **willingly** partook of the tree of the knowledge of good and evil following Eve partaking of this tree.

1 Timothy 2:14

14 And Adam was not deceived, but the woman being deceived, fell into transgression.

Adam is a *type of Him who was to come*, Christ. When Christ (who *knew no sin*, was made *sin for us*) first found His potential bride, she was in the same condition in which Adam found the woman!

After the woman had eaten of the forbidden fruit, she was no longer able to rule with Adam and Adam was unable to rule apart from the woman. Adam

knew, because of that which God had said, that without his wife he was unable to rule, and without her husband she was unable to be redeemed, as they were one flesh, and it was not good for the man to be alone – Gen. 2:23.

Adam, however, through the Woman's deception, became disqualified to rule before ever taking the scepter of rulership, leaving the incumbent, Satan, as the 'ruler of this world'. Consequently, Adam could not have fulfilled the purpose for his creation had he not acted just as he did.

Adam acted with a view to **the Woman's redemption**, in order that he, as a complete being (Adam, with Eve), might one day fulfill the purpose for man's creation.

And neither can Christ, the second Man, the last Adam, rule apart from a wife. He, *Who knew no sin was made sin for us*, with a view to both Christ and a **redeemed wife** one day taking the scepter and ascending the throne together.

After their fall, Adam and the woman *heard the sound of God walking in the garden*. The word *sound* is from an unused root meaning to *call aloud; a voice or sound; God's voice or thunderings*.

We learned that in Old Testament Scripture, to walk on land symbolized that an individual possessed that land or had authority over the land they walked on.

In Gen. 3:8 we read *they heard the sound of the LORD God walking in the garden in the **cool** of the day*.

The word **cool** is the Hebrew word *ruah* which means *Spirit, wind, breath*. It is the same word used in Gen. 1:2 –

*2 The earth was without form, and void; and darkness was on the face of the deep. And the **Spirit** of God was hovering over the face of the waters.*

After judgment comes restoration. God was walking in the Spirit (cool) of the day. As we studied in Gen. part 1, God's Spirit begins the process of restoration (Gen. 2:2). The Lord, being omniscient, already knew that Adam and the woman had sinned, and God's Spirit would begin the process of restoring them.

God was walking in the Spirit (cool) of **the day**. Perhaps we may also see that the phrase *Spirit of the day* points to a time yet future, the times of refreshing in that **Day**, the Sabbath Day out ahead, when God will restore all things.

Genesis 3:9-13

9 Then the LORD God called to Adam and said to him, "Where are you?" 10 So he said, "I heard Your voice in the garden, and I was afraid because I was naked; and I hid myself." 11 And He said, "Who told you that you were naked? Have you eaten from the tree of which I commanded you that you should not eat?" 12 Then the man said, "The woman whom You gave to be with me, she gave me of the tree, and I ate." 13 And the LORD God said to the woman, "What is this you have done?" The woman said, "The serpent deceived me, and I ate."

Why was Adam afraid according to v. 10 and what was God's response to Adam's answer in v. 11?

At the time of the fall, Adam and the woman lost their glory covering and they were naked (*utterly naked and helpless*). According to Rom. 6:23, *the wages of sin is death...*

So, let's examine what exactly *died* the day Adam and the woman sinned. (We discussed this topic in Gen. part 1 but review is good.)

Man was initially created in the image of God, the three in one Trinity. Man is a tripartite being, comprised of spirit, soul, and body.

- **The word for *spirit* in the New Testament is the Greek word *pneuma* or breath.**
- **The word for *soul* is *psuche*. It is often translated as life or heart, and is the vital force that keeps us alive. It is the place of our feelings, desires, affections, and aversions. (*Psych* in psychology originates from this word.)**
- **The word *body* is a translation of *sōma*. It means the physical body.**

All three—spirit, and soul, and body—are described in-

1 Thessalonians 5 :23

23 Now may the God of peace Himself sanctify you entirely; and may your spirit and soul and body be preserved complete, without blame at the coming of our Lord Jesus Christ.

After the fall of Man in the Garden of Eden sin affected all three parts of their being:

- Their human spirit died, and they were separated from God.
- Their soul became corrupted with a sinful nature. The soul now knew not only good but evil too.
- Their body lost the glory covering and so they could not be clothed in garments of splendor and majesty for rulership. Their bodies also started to physically die.

Remember, God initially created Man in His image for the purpose of rulership. Salvation is given as the only means by which Man can be placed back in a position to fulfill his created position, which is rulership in God's image (Gen.1:26).

Here is a question to think about. Do you think that God's provision for salvation is only for our spirit?

No, God's provision for salvation provides salvation for all three parts of man—spirit, soul, *and* body. (Refer back to I Thess. 5:23 seen above.) And, as we will see, salvation with respect to each part is dealt with as past, present, or future events with different verb tenses.

The *past* aspect of salvation refers to salvation with respect to our spirit and is a result of our putting faith in Jesus, fully apart from our own works.

Ephesians 2:8

*8 For by grace you **have been saved** through faith, and that not of yourselves; it is the gift of God,*

Notice the past tense ***have been saved***. Adam's sin in the garden of Eden produced death. Since his physical body continued to live, and his soul continued to exist (although in a corrupted state), it is obvious that it was man's spirit which died the day he disobeyed and ate of the forbidden fruit. The death of Adam's spirit separated him from God. With an unredeemed, inanimate spirit, he was spiritually dead and alienated or separated from God.

Unredeemed man is a fallen creature, alienated from God. Two things are necessary for man's redemption:

1. Divine intervention.
2. Substitute death and shed blood, which is also provided for by Divine intervention.

So how can someone be quickened or made alive *spiritually*? How can someone receive this free gift of salvation?

God always requires death and shed blood for the salvation of fallen man. Jesus, our Passover Lamb, has died on the cross and shed His blood on the cross for our sins - "*The next day John saw Jesus coming toward him, and said, "Behold! The Lamb of God who takes away the sin of the world!" John 1:29*

For fallen man to be saved, God requires that man believes in the Provision that He gave – His Son Jesus, the substitute Lamb of God who has taken away the sins of the world!

Acts 16:30-31

30 And he brought them out and said, "Sirs, what must I do to be saved?" 31 So they said, "Believe on the Lord Jesus Christ, and you will be saved, you and your household."

The Lamb has died, His blood has been shed, and all that is left — all that can possibly be left — is for man to simply believe that which has already been done on his behalf. Eternal salvation is by grace (that which God does completely apart from human merit) through faith – through believing on God's Son. Once we *believe on the Lord Jesus Christ* then we are quickened or *made alive* spiritually.

Ephesians 2:1

1 And you He made alive, who were dead in trespasses and sins,

This is our past salvation, our spiritual birth.

We will now be referring to the Restoration Circles Diagram, found on the last page of *this* lesson. ***(You may want to pull that chart out of your book so that you can have it in hand for the following reading.)

In the Restoration Circles Diagram, the first circle, entitled Flesh, represents the state we are all born into. We are all born spiritually dead, with the original sin passed down from the first man Adam. We are also born with an unredeemed soul and body. This is represented by the first circle.

| |
|---|
| <p>The present aspect of our salvation deals with the salvation of our corrupted soul.</p> |
|---|

This salvation is an ongoing process, a present continuing action as we deny ourselves, take up our cross and follow Christ in our journey of life.

Philippians 2:12

12 Therefore, my beloved, as you have always obeyed, not as in my presence only, but now much more in my absence, work out your own salvation with fear and trembling;

To whom is Paul speaking – Christians or the unsaved gentiles? Is the salvation speaking of spiritual salvation or salvation of the soul?

Paul is speaking to the *beloved*, the brethren, the Christians in the church of Philippi. The salvation he speaks of is the present aspect of our salvation, the salvation of the soul. Notice the words *work out*. This cannot be speaking of

the free gift of spiritual salvation as that does not involve works. This speaks of the ongoing process of our soul being saved.

While the salvation of the spirit is dealt with in the past tense, the salvation of the soul is always dealt with in the present and future tenses. The salvation of the soul is the present ongoing process for the Christian, with this salvation being realized at a future time, at the Judgment Seat of Christ. The following verses speak to Christians, not to unsaved individuals.

James 1:21

*21 Therefore lay aside all filthiness and overflow of wickedness, and receive with meekness the implanted word, which is able to **save your souls**.*

Hebrews 10:38-39

*38 Now the just shall live by faith; But if anyone draws back, My soul has no pleasure in him." 39 But we are not of those who draw back to perdition, but of those who believe **to the saving of the soul**.*

1 Peter 1:9

9 Receiving the end [aim or goal] of your faith, even the salvation of your souls.

The second circle in the Restoration Circles Diagram represents a redeemed child who has been spiritually quickened or made alive through faith in Christ.

Ephesians 1:13

*13 In Him you also trusted, after you heard the word of truth, the gospel of your salvation; in whom also, having believed, you were **sealed with the Holy Spirit of promise**,*

Once a person puts faith in Christ, who comes to dwell within them?

Once a person puts faith in Christ, they are *sealed with the Holy Spirit*. Our spiritual birth (the redemption of our spirit) happens at one point in time, the moment one believes in Jesus Christ, and from that point on, that person has eternal salvation. But is the soul redeemed yet?

No, the soul is still unredeemed, in a corrupt state. Is the arrow between the first and second circle in one direction or two directions? What might this represent?

This one-way arrow means that once man has put faith in Christ, they can never lose their spiritual salvation, they can never go back to a spiritually unsaved state.

Once a person is spiritually saved, they can never lose that position. Think of Israel after they were spiritually redeemed by placing their faith in the blood of their Passover lamb. Then God separated them from Egypt, and they could never go back to Egypt, even though they craved it at times in their rebellion. They could never return to Egypt and so we can never return to an unredeemed spiritual state.

In the second circle we can see that a saved person has a redeemed spirit alongside an unredeemed soul, both of which are housed within a body that still lacks the covering of pristine glory. And the unredeemed corrupt soul grieves or wars against the Holy Spirit Who dwells within us.

Ephesians 4:30

30 And do not grieve the Holy Spirit of God, by whom you were sealed for the day of redemption.

After a person becomes a Christian, do we still sin?

Yes, we do! While speaking to the Jewish religious leaders, Jesus makes it clear that if we even think sinful thoughts, we are guilty of sin.

Matthew 5:21-22a, 27-29

21 "You have heard that it was said to those of old, 'You shall not murder, and whoever murders will be in danger of the judgment.' 22 "But I say to you that whoever is angry with his brother without a cause shall be in danger of the judgment...27 "You have heard that it was said to those of old, 'You shall not commit adultery.' 28 "But I say to you that whoever looks at a woman to lust for her has already committed adultery with her in his heart. 29 "If your right eye causes you to sin, pluck it out and cast it from you; for it is more profitable for you that one of your members perish, than for your whole body to be cast into hell [Gehenna].

Can you think of a redeemed individual in the Old Testament that lusted after women and had their eyes plucked out?

Are the arrows between circle two and circle three and between circle two and circle four pointing in one direction or two? What might this represent?

This bidirectional arrow points to the fact that we can go back and forth from being a Christian that is walking in the flesh to being a Christian led by the spirit, and from being a spirit led Christian to being a Christian that is walking in the flesh. As spiritually redeemed children of God, we are to realign our thoughts that the man of the flesh has been put to death. We are to “take up” the cross, as Christ did, at the beginning of our spiritual journey. And then we are never to lay it down! This is a one-time event. We are to make the decision to deny ourselves (deny our sinful nature) and take up our cross (an instrument of **suffering and death**).

Matthew 16:24

24 Then Jesus said to His disciples, "If anyone desires to come after Me, let him deny himself, and take up his cross, and follow Me.

According to this verse, after our beginning point and one-time action of denying ourselves and taking up our cross, what are we to do?

We are to follow Christ. And following Christ is a continual, daily, life-long process. The Light that was brought forth and separated from darkness on Day 1 is a type of our one-time spiritual redemption. Days 2-6 of the restoration point to our continual life-long process of transforming the unredeemed soul that wars against the spirit, with Day 3 particularly focusing on our burial and being raised to walk in newness of life, as pictured in Baptism.

Romans 12:1

1 I beseech you therefore, brethren, by the mercies of God, that you present your bodies a living sacrifice, holy, acceptable to God, which is your reasonable service.

This “offering ourselves” as *a living sacrifice* as described in Romans 12:1, is a decision *subsequently* made to our faith in Christ and Paul is instructing *Christians* to do this as a one - time choice.

To repeat (and repetition is helpful when studying this message), just as Christ took up the cross, we are to “take up” the cross at the beginning of our spiritual journey. And then we are never to lay it down! We are to make the decision to deny ourselves (deny our sinful nature), take up our cross (an instrument of suffering and death) and then follow Christ. Following Christ is a continual daily life-long process.

*“For if ye live after the flesh ye shall die [death is separation]; but if ye through the Spirit do mortify the deeds of the body, ye shall live [life in the age to come which is ruling in His Millennial Kingdom out ahead” - Rom. 8:13]. The word *live* is synonymous with life together as one with Christ in His Coming Kingdom.*

The “old man” is to be affixed to the cross and not be allowed to move about. If mortification after this fashion occurs, the man will live (he will experience the salvation of his soul); however, if mortification after this fashion does not occur, the man will die (he will experience the loss of his soul, separation at the Judgment Seat of Christ and the loss of ruling alongside Christ as a joint heir in His Millennial Kingdom).

The words *take up* and *follow* in Matt. 16:24 appear in two different tenses in the Greek text. The first would refer to a one-time act, but the latter has to do with continuous action. That is, Christians are to *take up* the cross at the beginning of their pilgrim walk, never laying it down; and, in this manner, they are to follow Christ continuously throughout the pilgrim walk.

And in Rom. 12:1, Christians are told, *...present your bodies a living sacrifice*. The word *present* has to do with a one-time act to be performed at the beginning of the pilgrim walk, never to be repeated. This is similar to taking up our cross and never laying it down (Matt. 16:24). As the Old Testament priest placed the sacrifice upon the altar and left it there, the New Testament priest (a Christian) is called upon to do the same with his body. The body is to be placed upon the altar through a one-time act, and the body is then to remain upon the altar in a continuous state of sacrifice, never to be removed.

(Refer to Arlen Chitwood’s book **Salvation of the Soul** for further discussion on this topic.)

After we have been baptized into Christ’s death, and buried with Him in baptism, and raised with Him in resurrection power, then we can choose to continually follow Him and walk in the Spirit. But the fact remains that we can still choose to follow the desires of the carnal flesh. The choice is ours to make moment by moment.

Please refer to the Restoration Circle diagram again. Our unredeemed soul, our thoughts, and emotions, are still sin tainted and they war against our Spirit each second of the day! As the circles 3 and 4 show, we have a redeemed spirit alongside an unredeemed soul, both housed in an unredeemed body.

Do you think this makes for a peaceful existence?

No, this is not a peaceful existence. We are continually in a spiritual battle! Let's read what Apostle Paul says regarding this struggle.

Romans 7:18-25

18 For I know that in me (that is, in my flesh) nothing good dwells; for to will is present with me, but how to perform what is good I do not find. 19 For the good that I will to do, I do not do; but the evil I will not to do, that I practice. 20 Now if I do what I will not to do, it is no longer I who do it, but sin that dwells in me. 21 I find then a law, that evil is present with me, the one who wills to do good. 22 For I delight in the law of God according to the inward man. 23 But I see another law in my members, warring against the law of my mind, and bringing me into captivity to the law of sin which is in my members. 24 O wretched man that I am! Who will deliver me from this body of death? 25 I thank God--through Jesus Christ our Lord! So then, with the mind I myself serve the law of God, but with the flesh the law of sin.

What did Paul say about his flesh in v.18?

In v.22, what did Paul delight in?

Paul delighted in the law of God according to the inward man (the man of the spirit).

In Psalm 1, we read about the blessings for those who delight in the law of the Lord-

Psalm 1:1-3

*1 Blessed is the man Who walks not in the counsel of the ungodly, Nor stands in the path of sinners, Nor sits in the seat of the scornful; 2 But **his delight is in the law of the LORD**, And in His law he meditates day and night. 3 He shall be like a tree Planted by the rivers of water, That brings forth its fruit in its season, Whose leaf also shall not wither; And whatever he does shall prosper.*

Paul's flesh warred against his inward man, the man of the spirit. Paul struggled daily in this spiritual battle. And yet it was his inward man that delighted in God's Word. And for the Christian, as his man of the spirit delights in the Word of God, he shall bear much fruit for the Lord (Psalm 1).

Whom did Paul say would deliver him from this body of death?

Jesus Christ was the only one Who could deliver him from this body of death.

Jesus, our High Priest is sitting at the right hand of God the Father in the Heavens, as our Intercessor. And...

1 John 1:9

9 If we confess our sins, He is faithful and just to forgive us our sins and to cleanse us from all unrighteousness.

What must the Christian do to have his sins cleansed (lit. removed) according to 1 John 1:9?

We must confess our sins (lit. agree with God about our sin), and then we can move forward to a state represented by the third circle in the Restoration Circle diagram. Here we see the unredeemed soul, our old sin nature, having

been crucified and in the place of death. This circle represents the mature Christian who is led by the Spirit, following Christ.

Let's study the restoration diagram a bit more. In the Diagram Circle, #3, the redeemed spirit is crucifying the unredeemed soul and body. This represents a spirit filled Christian following the leading of the Holy Spirit. Compare this to circle four. Here we see a carnal Christian with their old sin nature, the unredeemed soul, grieving the Holy Spirit. The outcome for the unfaithful Christian is the loss of the prize.

Let's read some verses that describe the prize. First, let's go to Romans 8:1. Please take note that some of the Bible versions, such as the NASB and NIV, have omitted the last few words of this verse. However, the King James gives the complete verse. Here it is-

Romans 8:1

1 There is therefore now no condemnation to those who are in Christ Jesus, who do not walk according to the flesh, but according to the Spirit.

In 1Corinthians, Paul says-

1Corinthians 9:24-27

24 Do you not know that those who run in a race all run, but one receives the prize? Run in such a way that you may obtain it. 25 And everyone who competes for the prize is temperate in all things. Now they do it to obtain a perishable crown, but we for an imperishable crown. 26 Therefore I run thus: not with uncertainty. Thus I fight: not as one who beats the air. 27 But I discipline my body and bring it into subjection, lest, when I have preached to others, I myself should become disqualified.

Philippians 3:10-14

10 that I may know Him and the power of His resurrection, and the fellowship of His sufferings, being conformed to His death, 11 if, by any means, I may attain to the resurrection from the dead. 12 Not that I have already attained, or am

*already perfected; but I press on, that I may lay hold of that for which Christ Jesus has also laid hold of me. 13 Brethren, I do not count myself to have apprehended; but one thing I do, forgetting those things which are behind and reaching forward to those things which are ahead, 14 I press toward the goal for the **prize** of the upward call of God in Christ Jesus.*

The prize or reward for the good, and faithful servant is to rule and reign with Christ in His Millennial Kingdom. The reward is the inheritance, and the inheritance is reigning with Him in His heavenly Kingdom.

1Corinthians 3:11-15

*11 For no other foundation can anyone lay than that which is laid, which is Jesus Christ. 12 Now if anyone builds on this foundation with gold, silver, precious stones, wood, hay, straw, 13 each one's work will become clear; for the Day will declare it, because it will be revealed by fire; and the fire will test each one's work, of what sort it is. 14 If anyone's work which he has built on it endures, he will receive a **reward**. 15 If anyone's work is burned, he will suffer loss; but he himself will be saved, yet so as through fire.*

Who is this passage addressing? Can unbelievers receive a reward?

The passages below show the connection between the reward, the inheritance, and the Millennial Kingdom:

Matthew 25:34

34 "Then the King will say to those on His right hand, 'Come, you blessed of My Father, inherit the kingdom prepared for you from the foundation of the world:

Colossians 3:23-24

23 And whatever you do, do it heartily, as to the Lord and not to men, 24 knowing that from the Lord you will receive the reward of the inheritance; for you serve the Lord Christ.

Now let's examine Romans 6:3-6 again to better understand death-burial-resurrection in our lives-

*3 Or do you not know that as many of us as were baptized into Christ Jesus were baptized into His death? 4 Therefore we were buried with Him through baptism into death, that just as Christ was raised from the dead by the glory of the Father, even so we also should walk in newness of life. 5 For if we have been **united together in the likeness of His death, certainly we also shall be in the likeness of His resurrection**, 6 knowing this, that our old man was crucified with Him, that the body of sin might be done away with, that we should no longer be slaves of sin.*

As discussed previously, just as Jesus died (with all the sins of humanity placed upon Himself) and was buried and rose again on the Third Day, so must we realign our thoughts that our old man was crucified with Him and our old sin nature is in the place of death, thereby allowing us to be raised in newness of life, led by the Spirit.

Just as Christ died once, so our man of the flesh died once. This death and subsequent burial are a one-time event, and therefore we must always realign thinking with the truth that *the old man is already dead and buried*, as Paul says in

Romans 6:11

*11 Likewise you also, **reckon yourselves to be dead indeed to sin, but alive to God in Christ Jesus our Lord.***

Our first birth carried the sinful nature, the old man, and now that old man is dead through Christ! We are to *reckon ourselves* (realign our thinking) as being *dead to sin and alive to God in Christ Jesus our Lord*. This is our *dying to self daily*, realigning ourselves with the truth that the old man is already dead, and we are therefore no longer slaves to sin, but slaves to righteousness.

Romans 6:12-13

12 Therefore do not let sin reign in your mortal body, that you should obey it in its lusts. 13 And do not present your members as instruments of unrighteousness

to sin, but present yourselves to God as being alive from the dead, and your members as instruments of righteousness to God.

We examined the past aspect of our salvation, our spiritual salvation when we put faith in Jesus.

We reviewed the present aspect of our salvation, which deals with the salvation of our corrupted soul. This aspect of salvation is an ongoing process, a present continuing action. Once we choose to have denied ourselves and have taken up our cross, then we are to continually follow Christ in our journey of life.

We will briefly make mention of the future aspect of our salvation in this lesson in order to complete the three aspects of salvation.

The future aspect of our salvation speaks of the redemption of our bodies, after being found faithful at the Judgment Seat of Christ.

Romans 8:23

*23 Not only that, but we also who have the firstfruits of the Spirit, even we ourselves groan within ourselves, eagerly waiting for **the adoption, the redemption of our body.***

According to this passage, is the redemption of our body a past, present or future event?

Correct, it is a future event that will occur for the mature Christian who is found faithful at the Judgment Seat of Christ.

Just as Adam's body was enswathed in brilliant glory before the fall, so it will be again with the redemption of our body. And it is this glory covering that will enable us to rule with Christ in His Kingdom as His joint heir, adopted as His firstborn son.

The redemption of the body (salvation of the body) equates with our being *adopted*. The Greek word translated *adoption* (*huiiothesia*) means “son-placing. This equates with *being placed as a firstborn son within the family*, and glorified together with Christ, in His image, allowing us to rule by His side as a joint heir!

The Christian is already recognized as a son prior to the future adoption since we are a new creation, created in Christ Jesus. However, Christians found faithful at the Judgment Seat of Christ await the adoption into a firstborn status.

(Israel, in like manner, was already recognized as a son prior to the adoption as they were created, in Jacob –

Isaiah 43:1

1 But now, thus says the LORD, who created you, O Jacob, And He who formed you, O Israel: "Fear not, for I have redeemed you; I have called you by your name; You are Mine.

Israel has already been adopted and is now a firstborn son.

Exodus 4:22

"Then you shall say to Pharaoh, 'Thus says the LORD: "Israel is My son, My firstborn.

(For further study, please refer to Gen. 32:24-28.)

Do you recall the three firstborn sons who will reign in the Millennial Kingdom?

The three Firstborn sons:

- **Israel ruling in the earthly portion of the Millennial Kingdom.**
- **The Bride of Christ (taken from the Church) reigning from the heavenly portion of the Millennial Kingdom.**
- **Jesus Christ the King of kings and Lord of lords reigning over His entire glorious Millennial Kingdom, where all will be restored (man and the land)!**

These three firstborn sons, raised up on Adam's name, will enter and occupy the Kingdom of the Heavens and the Land of Israel, the locations from which rulership will take place, with the only begotten Firstborn Son, Jesus, in both locations. All firstborn sons must first endure much suffering in order to receive glory (rulership) in His coming Kingdom.

Suffering must always precede glory, as first mentioned to the woman in Gen.
– *In pain you shall bring forth children.*

The rights of the firstborn son are the following:

- **Receive a double portion of the inheritance**
- **Ruler (king) of the family**
- **Priest of the family**

The double portion is rulership with Christ in His 1000-year reign from the heavenly portion of His Kingdom over the earthly portion of His Kingdom (with no sin nature I might add!).

The position of being a ruler (king) and priest of the family is promised to the faithful Christian at the Judgment Seat of Christ:

Revelation 1:5-6

5 and from Jesus Christ, the faithful witness, the firstborn from the dead, and the ruler over the kings of the earth. To Him who loved us and washed us from our sins in His own blood, 6 and has made us kings and priests to His God and Father, to Him be glory and dominion forever and ever. Amen.

Romans 8:16-17

16 The Spirit Himself bears witness with our spirit that we are children of God, 17 and if children, then heirs--heirs of God and joint heirs with Christ, if indeed we suffer with Him, that we may also be glorified together.

Notice the words *if* indeed we suffer with Him, that we *may*... What might this imply?

The words *if* and *may* imply that becoming a joint heir is not something that happens automatically just because a person has become a Christian. A Christian must suffer with Christ, in order to also be glorified together with Christ in His coming Kingdom. ***Suffering always precedes glory.*** And the source of our suffering in our present ongoing journey towards spiritual maturity, is seen in the war that takes place within us as our redeemed spirit is constantly under attack by the fleshly desires and thoughts of our unredeemed soul.

Our suffering will be seen through the ongoing choices we make in bringing our unredeemed body and soul under submission to our redeemed spirit, as we are led by the Holy Spirit. And if we choose to make that choice ongoing, we will receive the Redemption of our body – that of being placed as a firstborn son within the Family of God and sharing in the Glory of Christ, ruling with Him in His Coming Kingdom.

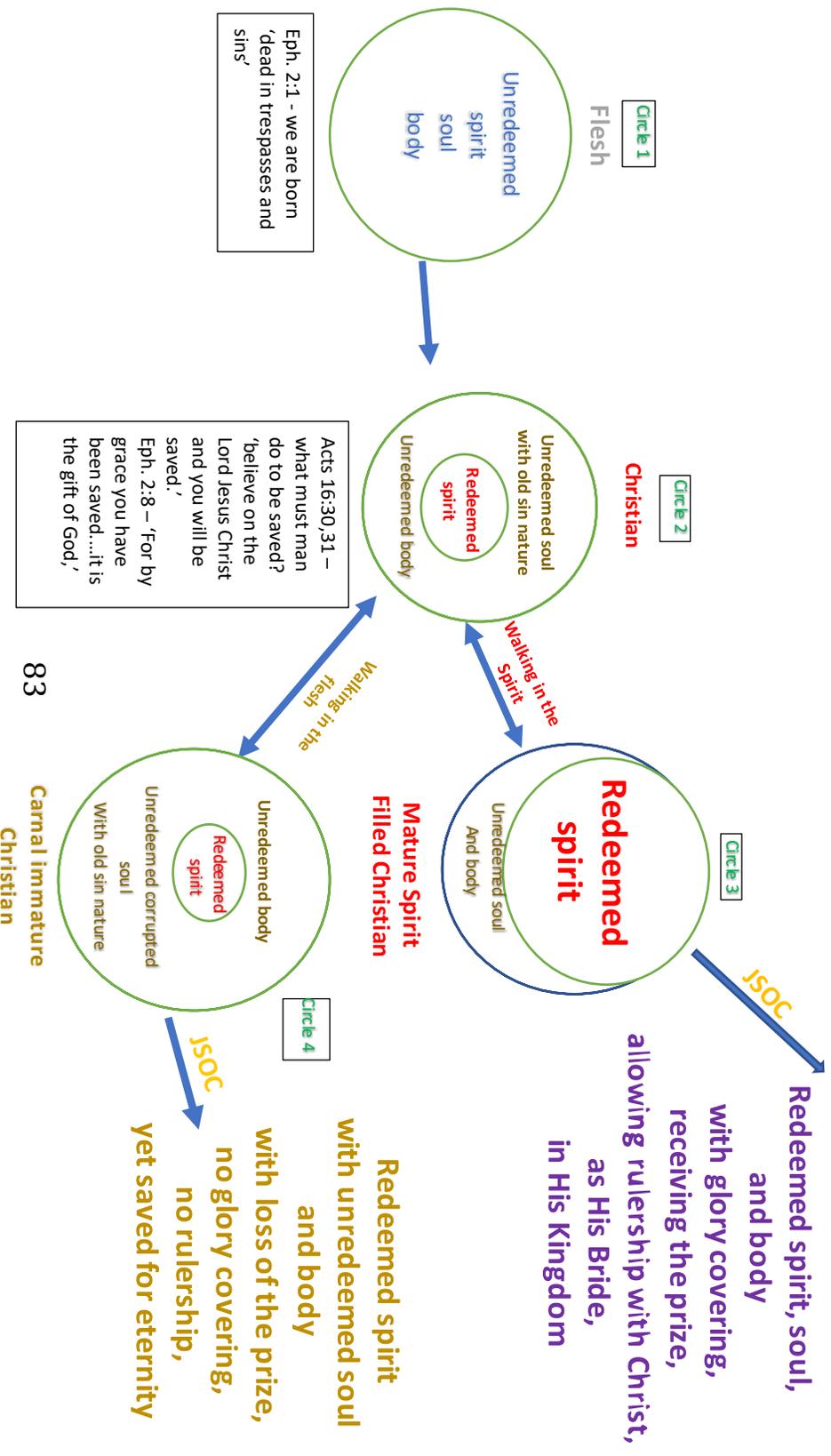
Keep on striving to receive this glorious redemption!

Our Restoration: Redemption and Rulership



Redeemed spirit, soul,
and body
with glory covering,
receiving the prize,
allowing rulership with Christ,
as His Bride,
in His Kingdom

Redeemed spirit
with unredeemed soul
and body
with loss of the prize,
no glory covering,
no rulership,
yet saved for eternity



Eph. 2:1 - we are born 'dead in trespasses and sins'

Acts 16:30,31 - what must man do to be saved? 'believe on the Lord Jesus Christ and you will be saved.'
Eph. 2:8 - 'For by grace you have been saved...it is the gift of God,'

The Book of Genesis Part 2

Lesson Eight – The Headship of the Serpent’s Seed is Crushed

Objective of Lesson Eight: The Seed of the woman crushes the head of the seed of the serpent

Genesis 3:9-13

9 Then the LORD God called to Adam and said to him, "Where are you?" 10 So he said, "I heard Your voice in the garden, and I was afraid because I was naked; and I hid myself." 11 And He said, "Who told you that you were naked? Have you eaten from the tree of which I commanded you that you should not eat?" 12 Then the man said, "The woman whom You gave to be with me, she gave me of the tree, and I ate." 13 And the LORD God said to the woman, "What is this you have done?" The woman said, "The serpent deceived me, and I ate."

Last lesson we saw that according to v.10, Adam was afraid when he heard the voice of God in the garden because Adam and the woman lost their glory covering and they were naked (*utterly naked and helpless*).

After the fall of Man in the Garden of Eden, sin affected all three parts of their being:

- Their human spirit died, and they were separated from God.
- Their soul became corrupted with a sinful nature. The soul now knew not only good but evil too.
- Their body lost the glory covering and so they could not be clothed in garments of splendor and majesty for rulership. Their bodies also started to physically die.

Remember, God initially created Man in His image for the purpose of rulership. Salvation is given as the only means by which Man can be placed back in a position to fulfill his created position, which is rulership in God's image (Gen.1:26).

God's provision for salvation provides salvation for all three parts of man—spirit, soul, *and* body (I Thess. 5:23).

We studied the different Greek words used for spirit, soul, and body:

- **The word for *spirit* in the New Testament is the Greek word *pneuma* or breath.**
- **The word for *soul* is *psuche*. It is often translated as life or heart, and is the vital force that keeps us alive. It is the place of our feelings, desires, affections, and aversions. (*Psych* in psychology originates from this word.)**
- **The word *body* is a translation of *sōma*. It means the physical body.**

And we examined the salvation of the Spirit, soul, and body.

- **The word for *spirit* in the New Testament is the Greek word *pneuma* or breath.**
- **The word for *soul* is *psuche*. It is often translated as life or heart, and is the vital force that keeps us alive. It is the place of our feelings, desires, affections, and aversions. (*Psych* in psychology originates from this word.)**
- **The word *body* is a translation of *sōma*. It means the physical body.**

The **past aspect of salvation** refers to salvation with respect to our spirit and is a result of our putting faith in Jesus, fully apart from our own works. It is a free gift.

The **present aspect of our salvation** deals with the salvation of our corrupted soul. This salvation is an ongoing process, a present continuing action as we deny ourselves, take up our cross and follow Christ in our journey of life. Salvation of the soul always involves works as it is not a free gift.

Philippians 2:12

12 Therefore, my beloved, as you have always obeyed, not as in my presence only, but now much more in my absence, work out your own salvation with fear and trembling.

James 1:21

*21 Therefore lay aside all filthiness and overflow of wickedness, and receive with meekness the implanted word, which is able to **save your souls**.*

The **future aspect of our salvation** speaks of the redemption of our bodies, after being found faithful at the Judgment Seat of Christ. It involves receiving the glory covering as seen in Adam and the woman before the fall,

(Please refer to the Restoration Circle diagram for further review.)

In Gen. 3:13 we read "And the LORD God said to the woman, "What is this you have done?" The woman said, "The serpent deceived me, and I ate."

The woman admits that she was deceived by the serpent Satan, and she disobeyed. And so, the man and the woman lost their potential position of rulership.

Remember, that Satan is the father of lies and he is continually and strategically using the same modus operandi – lies and deception - to prevent Christ and His firstborn Sons from ruling in that Day, the Seventh Day Sabbath Rest out ahead. Rulership from the heavens over the earth is what is at stake. The serpent continues to place obstacles into the entrance of Christ's heavenly kingdom.

Genesis 3:14-16

14 So the LORD God said to the serpent: "Because you have done this, You are cursed more than all cattle, And more than every beast of the field; On your belly you shall go, And you shall eat dust All the days of your life. 15 And I will put enmity Between you and the woman, And between your seed and her Seed; He shall bruise your head, And you shall bruise His heel." 16 To the woman He said:

"I will greatly multiply your sorrow and your conception; In pain you shall bring forth children; Your desire shall be for your husband, And he shall rule over you."

What was the serpent's judgment?

Recall that man was created to have dominion over the cattle and beasts of the field –

Gen. 1:26

26 Then God said, "Let Us make man in Our image, according to Our likeness; let them have dominion over the fish of the sea, over the birds of the air, and over the cattle, over all the earth and over every creeping thing that creeps on the earth."

And here we see the serpent cursed, lower than the living creatures, crawling on his belly, eating (devouring) the dust of the earth. (And in this description of *devouring the dust of the earth* we might see a foreshadowing of the serpent's desire to devour man, made from the dust of the earth.)

Recall that in eternity past, Lucifer attempted to exalt himself above God and then came his fall, as pride always comes before the fall –

Isaiah 14:12-15

12 "How you are fallen from heaven, O Lucifer, son of the morning! How you are cut down to the ground, You who weakened the nations! 13 For you have said in your heart: 'I will ascend into heaven, I will exalt my throne above the stars of God; I will also sit on the mount of the congregation On the farthest sides of the north; 14 I will ascend above the heights of the clouds, I will be like the Most High.' 15 Yet you shall be brought down to Sheol, To the lowest depths of the Pit.

In, Gen.3:15, God was letting the serpent know that he **would not rule in that Day**. Man would rule –

Psalm 8:4-9

4 What is man that You are mindful of him, And the son of man that You visit him? 5 For You have made him a little lower than the angels, And You have crowned him with glory and honor. 6 You have made him to have dominion over the works of Your hands; You have put all things under his feet, 7 All sheep and oxen--Even the beasts of the field, 8 The birds of the air, And the fish of the sea That pass through the paths of the seas. 9 O LORD, our Lord, How excellent is Your name in all the earth!

In Gen. 3:15 God also tells the serpent, *And I will put enmity Between you and the woman, And between your seed and her Seed; He shall bruise your head, And you shall bruise His heel.*

This is the first Messianic prophecy given in Scripture. Who is the serpent's seed and who is the Seed of the woman?

The seed (singular) of the serpent refers to the antichrist, the counterfeit God the Son, that leads many astray during the tribulation and in this current age.

1John 2:22

22 Who is a liar but he who denies that Jesus is the Christ? He is antichrist who denies the Father and the Son.

1John 4:3

3 and every spirit that does not confess that Jesus Christ has come in the flesh is not of God. And this is the spirit of the Antichrist, which you have heard was coming, and is now already in the world.

Who is the antichrist, the seed of the serpent, according to these passages?

The Seed (singular) of the Woman is the promised Redeemer, the Lord Jesus Christ. And Christ's redemptive work includes the complete restoration of fallen mankind, spirit, soul and body, the redemption and restoration of national Israel, and the restoration of the earth presently under a curse according to **Romans 8:18-21** –

18 For I consider that the sufferings of this present time are not worthy to be compared with the glory which shall be revealed in us. 19 For the earnest expectation of the creation eagerly waits for the revealing of the sons of God. 20 For the creation was subjected to futility, not willingly, but because of Him who subjected it in hope; 21 because the creation itself also will be delivered from the bondage of corruption into the glorious liberty of the children of God.

At the end of Christ's Millennial Reign, a new heaven and earth will be created.

Isaiah 65:17

17 "For behold, I create new heavens and a new earth; And the former shall not be remembered or come to mind.

2Peter 3:13

13 Nevertheless we, according to His promise, look for new heavens and a new earth in which righteousness dwells.

Revelation 21:1

1 Now I saw a new heaven and a new earth, for the first heaven and the first earth had passed away. Also, there was no more sea.

It will be from the new earth that the Father and the Son, along with all the eternally redeemed, will rule the universe. And this is the rulership that Satan sought after in his rebellion in eternity past (Isa. 14).

Satan still covets this position of rulership and so the promise of a Redeemer, from the Seed of the woman, is the focus for Satan's deception and destructive plans.

The Kingdom was ruined in eternity past because of Satan's pride. And God began His restorative work and created man to rule in place of angelic beings.

Genesis 1:2-3

2 The earth was without form, and void; and darkness was on the face of the deep. And the Spirit of God was hovering over the face of the waters. 3 Then God said, "Let there be light"; and there was light.

Genesis 1:26

26 Then God said, "Let Us make man in Our image, according to Our likeness; let them have dominion over the fish of the sea, over the birds of the air, and over the cattle, over all the earth and over every creeping thing that creeps on the earth."

And remember, it was because of this Kingdom and the desire to maintain rulership over it, that the serpent deceived the Woman and brought about the fall of Adam and the woman.

Recall that the Kingdom of God and the Kingdom of heaven and the Millennial Reign of Christ from the heavens **all refer to the same Kingdom.**

It was this Kingdom which was in view in eternity past when Lucifer and angelic beings ruled from the heavens over the earth. And the earth and the sanctuaries associated with it were then ruined (Gen. 1:1, 2a).

It was this Kingdom which was in view in in the seven-day restoration of the ruined kingdom (Gen. 1:2b-25).

It was this Kingdom which was in view when man was created to rule the restored kingdom (Gen. 1:26-28).

It was this Kingdom which was in view when the incumbent ruler (Satan) brought about man's fall so that man would be disqualified to rule this kingdom.

Can you think of another mention of this Kingdom during Christ's first advent?

Matthew 4:1-2, 8-11

1 Then Jesus was led up by the Spirit into the wilderness to be tempted by the devil. 2 And when He had fasted forty days and forty nights, afterward He was hungry. ... 8 Again, the devil took Him up on an exceedingly high mountain, and showed Him all the kingdoms of the world and their glory. 9 And he said to Him, "All these things I will give You if You will fall down and worship me." 10 Then Jesus said to him, "Away with you, Satan! For it is written, 'You shall worship the LORD your God, and Him only you shall serve.' " 11 Then the devil left Him, and behold, angels came and ministered to Him.

Recall that Adam is *a type of Him who was to come* (Rom. 5:24).

The **first man, the first Adam**, appears in Genesis; **the second Man, the last Adam** (Christ), appears in Matthew. And it is very interesting that Satan appears **both** times; and the temptations have to do with a kingdom **both** times, the same kingdom!

In both temptation accounts in Gen. 3 and Matt. 4., it is the kingdom which Satan has ruled from the beginning, that is in view.

This is the kingdom over which Satan, with his angels, has ruled from the beginning (*cf.* Ezek. 28:14ff; Dan. 4:17, 25; Luke 4:5, 6), and continues to rule today; this is the kingdom which the first man, the first Adam, was created to rule, replacing the incumbent ruler (Gen. 1:26- 28) before the fall.

(Recall that in eternity past, angelic beings ruled over the earth and its' associated sanctuaries. And Lucifer was the *anointed cherub* or *Messianic angel* who ruled in eternity past. In both the first and last books of the Bible,

and in Ezekiel 28:12-18 of eternity past, we see the garden of Eden [a garden of pleasure, paradise], as a place of rulership. Eden is where we see the man, Adam, and the woman placed in Genesis and they were created to rule or have dominion according to Gen. 1:26).

Matthew 3:1-2

1 In those days John the Baptist came preaching in the wilderness of Judea, 2 and saying, "Repent, for the kingdom of heaven is at hand!"

What Kingdom is in view in this passage?

Remember that God had created the nation of Israel to be His chosen people. And the message of repentance, *for the kingdom of heaven is at hand* (Matt.6:33), again speaks of the offer of ruling from the heavens over the earth in Christ's Millennial Kingdom. As we know, Israel rejected this message and crucified their King. Due to their rejection, the offer of rulership from the heavens over the earth would be given to a new nation, the Church –

"Therefore say I unto you, The kingdom of God shall be taken from you, and given to a nation bringing forth the fruits thereof." Matt. 21:43

And although Israel has lost the heavenly portion of Christ's Kingdom, they will still rule in the earthly realm, covenanted to David, in the Messianic era.

The kingdom of this world, with its rulership in heavenly place (the kingdom of the heavens) must become *that of our Lord and of his Christ* before the kingdom can be restored to Israel.

Israel is the physical seed of Abraham, and the church is the spiritual seed of Abraham, through faith in the Son (Gal. 3:29).

In the coming age, when *the kingdom of the world has become that of our Lord and of his Christ*, the seed of Abraham above will rule through the seed of Abraham below.

Revelation 11:15

15 Then the seventh angel sounded: And there were loud voices in heaven, saying, "The kingdoms of this world have become the kingdoms of our Lord and of His Christ, and He shall reign forever and ever!"

And finally, at the conclusion of Christ's Millennial Reign, a new heaven and earth will be created –*we, according to His promise, look for new heavens and a new earth in which righteousness dwells* (2Peter 3:13).

In eternity future, it will be from the new earth that the Father and the Son, along with all the eternally redeemed, will rule the universe. And this is the rulership that Satan sought after in his rebellion in eternity past (Isa. 14).

Revelation 21:1-4

1 Now I saw a new heaven and a new earth, for the first heaven and the first earth had passed away. Also there was no more sea. 2 Then I, John, saw the holy city, New Jerusalem, coming down out of heaven from God, prepared as a bride adorned for her husband. 3 And I heard a loud voice from heaven saying, "Behold, the tabernacle of God is with men, and He will dwell with them, and they shall be His people. God Himself will be with them and be their God. 4 "And God will wipe away every tear from their eyes; there shall be no more death, nor sorrow, nor crying. There shall be no more pain, for the former things have passed away."

This is such an important message, and it is why Jesus told us to *seek first His Kingdom and His Righteousness*. (Matt. 6:33)!

Hebrews 12:28

*28 Therefore, since **we are receiving a kingdom** which cannot be shaken, let us have grace, by which we may serve God acceptably with reverence and godly fear.*

After the fall, Satan and his angels moved into that place of rulership, ruling from the heavens over the earth in this age, until the Seed of the woman, Christ, restores all things, and that includes rulership!

Ephesians 6:12

12 For we do not wrestle against flesh and blood, but against principalities, against powers, against the rulers of the darkness of this age, against spiritual hosts of wickedness in the heavenly places.

1Corinthians 15:22-28

22 For as in Adam all die, even so in Christ all shall be made alive. 23 But each one in his own order: Christ the firstfruits, afterward those who are Christ's at His coming. 24 Then comes the end, when He delivers the kingdom to God the Father, when He puts an end to all rule and all authority and power. 25 For He must reign till He has put all enemies under His feet. 26 The last enemy that will be destroyed is death. 27 For "He has put all things under His feet." But when He says "all things are put under Him," it is evident that He who put all things under Him is excepted. 28 Now when all things are made subject to Him, then the Son Himself will also be subject to Him who put all things under Him, that God may be all in all.

How is Christ described in this passage?

The Seed of the woman (Christ) in Gen. 3:15 puts *an end to all rule and all authority and power* and restores the Kingdom. Christ is the *firstfruits* and *firstfruits* points to resurrection, with rulership to be established in the Millennial Reign for God's Son, the last Adam, and those who will rule with Him in Satan's place.

Gen. 3:15 is the first mention of God's Son and His regality in the Kingdom. And this verse, sets the foundation for God's plans regarding the Kingdom.

As mentioned earlier, the seed of the serpent is the antichrist who is to come.

And according to **1John 4:3** –

every spirit that does not confess that Jesus Christ has come in the flesh is not of God. And this is the spirit of the Antichrist

Gen. 3:15 is prophetic in nature in that it not only shows the enmity between the seed of the serpent (the antichrist), and the Seed of the woman (Christ), but it also points to the enmity between Abraham's seed and the seed of the antichrist.

The Seed of the Woman would be Jewish and come from the seed of Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob. The Messiah would come from the nation of Israel (Gen. 12:2,3; 15:4,5; 22:17,18).

The promises of rulership in God's Kingdom would be given to Abraham's seed (the physical and spiritual seed of Abraham with Christians being the spiritual seed of Abraham through faith in the Son (Gal. 3:29).

So, the enemy of God focuses his attack on Israel, throughout the age. This attack will intensify during the tribulation under the son of the serpent Satan, the antichrist. The antichrist will attempt to annihilate God's people Israel.

During the tribulation, Satan will give his throne and power and great authority to his son. And the Son of God, Christ, will take it from him –

Isaiah 9:6-7

*6 For unto us a Child is born, Unto us **a Son is given**; And the government will be upon His shoulder. And His name will be called Wonderful, Counselor, Mighty God, Everlasting Father, Prince of Peace. 7 Of the increase of His government*

*and peace **There will be no end, Upon the throne of David and over His kingdom**, To order it and establish it with judgment and justice From that time forward, even forever. The zeal of the LORD of hosts will perform this.*

So then, the primary type seen in the enmity between the serpent and the Woman is fulfilled in the antitype through Satan and Israel.

As just mentioned, Christians are the spiritual seed of Abraham through faith in Christ –

And if you are Christ's, then you are Abraham's seed, and heirs according to the promise (Gal. 3:29).

And we learned earlier, the Bride of Christ that will rule with Christ in His Kingdom one day. And so, there is **enmity between Satan and those Christians in pursuit of the Kingdom also.**

Satan, through his deception, continues to prevent that which God had said about the Man and the Woman having dominion together in the 7th Day from coming to pass, so that he may retain his hold on power forever.

*And I will put enmity Between you and the woman, And between your seed and her Seed; He shall bruise your head, And you shall bruise His heel. **Gen. 3:15***

What does the phrase *He shall bruise your head, And you shall bruise His heel* refer to?

At the cross, the heel of God's Son was bruised or crushed. Yet it was Satan's head which was crushed and this refers to Satan's headship with regards to the rulership of the Kingdom. In that Day, the Seventh Day Sabbath Rest out ahead, Satan's crown will be removed and given to the Seed of the Woman, Christ! This is the conclusion of the enmity between the seed of the serpent and the Seed of the woman. The Lord's will, **will be done and His Kingdom will come**, in that Day –

Matthew 6:9-10

9 "In this manner, therefore, pray: Our Father in heaven, Hallowed be Your name. 10 Your kingdom come. Your will be done On earth as it is in heaven.

(For a summary regarding the kingdom, please refer to the document **The Kingdom of God** in the appendix).

As previously mentioned, crushing the head means crushing Satan's headship or rulership. Victory regarding the establishment of Christ's coming Kingdom, through His redemptive work, is what we see in the phrase *He shall bruise your head*.

Through the descendants of Abraham, Isaac and Jacob, the promised Seed of the Woman would come. And God elects to work through one man, Adam, who is a type foreshadowing the coming of the One Man, the last Adam, Jesus Christ, the Seed of the Woman.

Romans 5:19

19 For as by one man's disobedience many were made sinners, so also by one Man's obedience many will be made righteous.

The Seed of the Woman and the Seed of Abraham, the Lord Jesus Christ is the heir of the world, looking to that Day when the present system of rulership in the heavens and Gentile world power on the earth will be overthrown.

And in that Day, Jesus, with His brethren according to the flesh (the Jews- the physical descendants of Abraham) will reign on the earth. His Bride (taken from the church- the spiritual descendants of Abraham, through faith), will rule from the heavens. And Jesus and His physical and spiritual descendants will rule the nations with a rod of iron in His coming Kingdom.

And once the ruler of this age heard the words of God given in Gen. 3:15, he focused on destroying the Seed of the Woman by corrupting the blood line of the human race, through the cohabitation of fallen angels with the daughters of men (Gen. 6). The offspring of the corrupted bloodline were the giants or

Nephilim. In our next study on Genesis, we will see how the giants attacked God's people and attempted to destroy the Seed of the woman.

We can also see the enemy attempt to destroy the Seed of the Woman through the type given with Cain killing Able. Cain is a type of the Jewish brethren, the nation of Israel, that killed their Jewish brother Able, a type of Christ. (We will be discussing this further in a subsequent lesson on Gen. 4.)

Can you think of any other events in Scripture where Satan attempts to destroy the Seed of the Woman?

Exodus 1:8-9, 11, 14, 16, 22

8 Now there arose a new king over Egypt, who did not know Joseph. 9 And he said to his people, "Look, the people of the children of Israel are more and mightier than we; ... 11 Therefore they set taskmasters over them to afflict them with their burdens. And they built for Pharaoh supply cities, Pithom and Raamses. ... 14 And they made their lives bitter with hard bondage--in mortar, in brick, and in all manner of service in the field. All their service in which they made them serve was with rigor. ... 16 and he said, "When you do the duties of a midwife for the Hebrew women, and see them on the birthstools, if it is a son, then you shall kill him; but if it is a daughter, then she shall live." ... 22 So Pharaoh commanded all his people, saying, "Every son who is born you shall cast into the river, and every daughter you shall save alive."

How did Satan attempt to destroy the Jewish bloodline according to this passage?

Satan attempted to kill the sons of Israel by oppressive slave work under the Egyptian Pharaoh. Pharaoh commanded *if it is a son, then you shall kill him; but if it is a daughter, then she shall live.* ... 22 So Pharaoh commanded all his people, saying, *"Every son who is born you shall cast into the river.*

Now let's see another tactic the enemy used to contaminate the bloodline of the Seed of the woman –

Numbers 23:7

And he took up his oracle and said: "Balak the king of Moab has brought me from Aram, From the mountains of the east. 'Come, curse Jacob for me, And come, denounce Israel!'

Moab means *of his Father* and Moab is the nation descended from the son of Lot and his daughter (conceived in an incestuous union).

Moab was an enemy of Israel and of God. King Balak of Moab attempted to have God's prophet, Balaam, curse Israel.

When King Balak failed in having Israel cursed (Num. 23:11), he came up with another scheme.

Numbers 25:1-3

Now Israel remained in Acacia Grove, and the people began to commit harlotry with the women of Moab. 2 They invited the people to the sacrifices of their gods, and the people ate and bowed down to their gods. 3 So Israel was joined to Baal of Peor, and the anger of the LORD was aroused against Israel.

What was the scheme King Balak used to destroy Israel according to this passage?

King Balak's scheme was to have Israel assimilate into the pagan world system under the sway of the god of this age. And interestingly enough, this same practice of God's people assimilating into the world (the doctrine of Balaam) is exactly what Jesus warns the **church** not to do in Revelation!

Revelation 2:14

"But I have a few things against you, because you have there those who hold the doctrine of Balaam, who taught Balak to put a stumbling block before the children of Israel, to eat things sacrificed to idols, and to commit sexual immorality.

Can you see how easy it might be for us to assimilate into this current age, especially when we set our minds on things of this world rather than on things of above (Col. 3:2)?

Galatians 1:10

10 For do I now persuade men, or God? Or do I seek to please men? For if I still pleased men, I would not be a bondservant of Christ.

Colossians 3:22-25

22 Bondservants, obey in all things your masters according to the flesh, not with eyeservice, as men-pleasers, but in sincerity of heart, fearing God. 23 And whatever you do, do it heartily, as to the Lord and not to men, 24 knowing that from the Lord you will receive the reward of the inheritance; for you serve the Lord Christ. 25 But he who does wrong will be repaid for what he has done, and there is no partiality.

Can you describe the significance of these passages and how they might prevent us from assimilating into the compromising and godless culture of today?

Esther is a book in the Old Testament that describes events that occurred when the nation of Israel was under captivity by the Medes and Persians. Esther, a Jew, became the Queen of the Mede-Persian King, Ahasuerus. The king promoted a man in his court named Haman. Haman had ten sons.

Esther 3:1,8-11

*1 After these things King Ahasuerus promoted Haman, the son of Hammedatha the Agagite, and advanced him and set his seat above all the princes who were with him...8 Then Haman said to King Ahasuerus, "There is a certain people scattered and dispersed among the people in all the provinces of your kingdom; their laws are different from all other people's, and they do not keep the king's laws. Therefore it is not fitting for the king to let them remain. 9 "If it pleases the king, let a decree be written **that they be destroyed,**..." 10 So the king took his signet ring from his hand and gave it to Haman, the son of Hammedatha the Agagite, the enemy of the Jews. 11 And the king said to Haman, "The money and the people are given to you, to do with them as seems good to you."*

What did Haman attempt to do and why?

Haman, an enemy of the Jews, devised a plan to exterminate them. The Book of Esther gives us a prophetic picture of Israel in the future time, the tribulation. Esther is a picture of God's wife, Israel. Haman is a picture of the antichrist who will try to annihilate Israel starting at the mid-tribulation period. The same satanic driving force behind Haman will be the same satanic force which will drive the antichrist, the seed of the serpent. During the tribulation period, the son of the serpent, the antichrist will make one more attempt to destroy the Seed of the woman, Israel. But God will intervene.

Esther 5:1, 3-4, 6-7

*1 Now it happened **on the third day** that Esther put on her royal robes and stood in the inner court of the king's palace, across from the king's house, while the king sat on his royal throne in the royal house, facing the entrance of the house. ... 3 And the king said to her, "What do you wish, Queen Esther? What is your request? It shall be given to you--up to half the kingdom!" 4 So Esther answered, "If it pleases the king, let the king and Haman come today to the banquet that I have prepared for him." ... 6 At the banquet of wine the king said to Esther, "What is your petition? It shall be granted you. What is your request, up to half the kingdom? It shall be done!" 7 Then Esther answered and said, "My petition and request is this:*

What day did Esther make her request unto the King?

(Please refer to the **expanded timeline** in the appendix.)

Esther 7:3-6

3 Then Queen Esther answered and said, "If I have found favor in your sight, O king, and if it pleases the king, let my life be given me at my petition, and my people at my request. 4 "For we have been sold, my people and I, to be destroyed, to be killed, and to be annihilated. Had we been sold as male and female slaves, I would have held my tongue, although the enemy could never compensate for the king's loss." 5 So King Ahasuerus answered and said to Queen Esther, "Who is he, and where is he, who would dare presume in his heart to do such a thing?" 6 And Esther said, "The adversary and enemy is this wicked Haman!" So Haman was terrified before the king and queen.

Now let's read what happens to Haman, a type of the future antichrist.

Esther 7:10

10 So they hanged Haman on the gallows that he had prepared for Mordecai. Then the king's wrath subsided.

Esther 9:5,12

*5 Thus the Jews defeated all their enemies with the stroke of the sword, with slaughter and destruction, and did what they pleased with those who hated them. 12 And the king said to Queen Esther, "The Jews have killed and destroyed five hundred men in Shushan the citadel, and **the ten sons of Haman**.*

Just as Esther defeated Haman and his ten sons through divine intervention **on the Third Day**, so will Israel defeat the antichrist, the beast with his ten nations **on the Third Day**.

Revelation 13:1

*1 Then I stood on the sand of the sea. And I saw a beast rising up out of the sea, having seven heads and **ten horns, and on his horns ten crowns, and on his heads a blasphemous name**.*

Notice that there are ten horns which represent the ten nations that will come against Israel during the tribulation period, led by the antichrist. Haman had ten sons that came against Israel during the time of Esther, under the influence of Haman. Ten could literally represent ten nations that will come against Israel during the tribulation (see Psalm 83: 4-9), but ten is also a number of completeness in Scripture so it may represent a complete number of Gentile nations during the tribulation that will coalesce together with the goal to annihilate Israel. Just as God intervenes for the Jews in the Book of Esther, we see God intervening for Israel at the end of the tribulation.

Revelation 17:12-14

12 "The ten horns which you saw are ten kings who have received no kingdom as yet, but they receive authority for one hour as kings with the beast. 13 "These are of one mind, and they will give their power and authority to the beast. 14 "These will make war with the Lamb, and the Lamb will overcome them, for He is Lord of lords and King of kings; and those who are with Him are called, chosen, and faithful."

The Lamb, Jesus Christ, will defeat the antichrist and the gentile nations that come against Israel at the end of the tribulation.

Revelation 19:19-21

19 And I saw the beast, the kings of the earth, and their armies, gathered together to make war against Him who sat on the horse and against His army. 20 Then the beast was captured, and with him the false prophet who worked signs in his presence, by which he deceived those who received the mark of the beast and those who worshiped his image. These two were cast alive into the lake of fire burning with brimstone. 21 And the rest were killed with the sword which proceeded from the mouth of Him who sat on the horse. And all the birds were filled with their flesh.

Matthew 2:1-3, 16

1 Now after Jesus was born in Bethlehem of Judea in the days of Herod the king, behold, wise men from the East came to Jerusalem, 2 saying, "Where is He who has been born King of the Jews? For we have seen His star in the East and have come to worship Him." 3 When Herod the king heard this, he was troubled, and all Jerusalem with him. ... 16 Then Herod, when he saw that he was deceived by the wise men, was exceedingly angry; and he sent forth and put to death all the male children who were in Bethlehem and in all its districts, from two years old and under, according to the time which he had determined from the wise men.

How did the seed of the serpent attempt to destroy the Seed of the Woman in this passage?

Matthew 21:33-45

33 "Hear another parable: There was a certain landowner who planted a vineyard and set a hedge around it, dug a winepress in it and built a tower. And he leased it to vinedressers and went into a far country. 34 "Now when vintage-time drew near, he sent his servants to the vinedressers, that they might receive its fruit. 35 "And **the vinedressers took his servants, beat one, killed one, and stoned another.** 36 "Again he sent other servants, more than the first, and they did likewise to them. 37 "Then last of all he sent his son to them, saying, 'They will respect my son.' 38 "But **when the vinedressers saw the son, they said among themselves, 'This is the heir. Come, let us kill him and seize his inheritance.'** 39 "So they took him and cast him out of the vineyard and killed him. 40 "Therefore, when the owner of the vineyard comes, what will he do to those vinedressers?" 41 They said to Him, "He will destroy those wicked men miserably, and lease his vineyard to other vinedressers who will render to him the fruits in their seasons." 42 Jesus said to them, "Have you never read in the Scriptures: 'The stone which the builders rejected Has become the chief cornerstone. This was the LORD's doing, And it is marvelous in our eyes' ? 43 "Therefore I say to you, the kingdom of God will be taken from you and given to a nation bearing the fruits of it. 44 "And whoever falls on this stone will be broken; but on whomever it falls, it will grind him to powder." 45 Now when the chief priests and Pharisees heard His parables, they perceived that He was speaking of them.

In this parable, we see Israel's millennia of disobedience culminating with the rejection of their King 2,000 years ago. As a result, the heavenly portion of the Millennial Kingdom was taken away from Israel (the seed of the Woman) and was offered to a new nation, the Church.

In this parable, who does the landowner represent and who are the vinedressers?

Who are the servants that were sent and what did the vinedressers do to them?

Please refer to the document **Parable of the Vinedresser** at the end of this lesson. We have examined this in previous Bible studies. Satan attempted to thwart God's redemptive plans for Israel by silencing God's prophets.

Who was the son in the parable of the Vineyard and what did the vinedressers do to him?

Matthew 26:1-2

1 Now it came to pass, when Jesus had finished all these sayings, that He said to His disciples, 2 "You know that after two days is the Passover, and the Son of Man will be delivered up to be crucified."

The Seed of the woman, our Passover Lamb was crucified. His sacrificial death on the cross allowed the head of the serpent, Satan to be crushed.

1Corinthians 2:7-8

7 But we speak the wisdom of God in a mystery, the hidden wisdom which God ordained before the ages for our glory, 8 which none of the rulers of this age [Satan and his emissaries] knew; for had they known, they would not have crucified the Lord of glory.

What does this passage tell you?

Revelation 20:1-3, 7, 9-10

1 Then I saw an angel coming down from heaven, having the key to the bottomless pit and a great chain in his hand. 2 He laid hold of the dragon, that serpent of old, who is the Devil and Satan, and bound him for a thousand years; 3 and he cast him into the bottomless pit, and shut him up, and set a seal on him, so that he should deceive the nations no more till the thousand years were finished. But after these things he must be released for a little while. ... 7 Now when the thousand years have expired, Satan will be released from his prison ... 9 They went up on the breadth of the earth and surrounded the camp of the saints and the beloved city. And fire came down from God out of heaven and devoured them. 10 The devil, who deceived them, was cast into the lake of fire and brimstone where the beast and the false prophet are. And they will be tormented day and night forever and ever.

From this passage, describe the final outcome of the enmity between the seed of the serpent and the Seed of the woman.

Revelation 21:1, 4

1 Now I saw a new heaven and a new earth, for the first heaven and the first earth had passed away. Also there was no more sea. ... 4 "And God will wipe away every tear from their eyes; there shall be no more death, nor sorrow, nor crying. There shall be no more pain, for the former things have passed away."

What will be removed in the *new heaven and new earth*?

Day 8 follows Day 7 (the Millennial Reign of Christ) and points to new beginnings, the new heaven and earth, where all *tears, death, sorrow, crying*

and *pain* will be removed. And since *the wages of sin is death* (Rom. 6:23), and there *shall be no more death* in the new heaven and earth, then it follows that all sin is removed (cut off) in the new heaven and earth.

Genesis 17:12

12 "He who is eight days old among you shall be circumcised, every male child in your generations, he who is born in your house or bought with money from any foreigner who is not your descendant.

Genesis 21:4

4 Then Abraham circumcised his son Isaac when he was eight days old, as God had commanded him.

What day was the *cutting off of the flesh* (circumcision), to occur in the male child and can you see the spiritual significance of this? (Hint: read Deut. 10:16 below.)

Deuteronomy 10:16

16 "Therefore circumcise the foreskin of your heart, and be stiff-necked no longer.

(An interesting physical fact in God's design is that male circumcision should be carried out on the eighth day after birth since the level of vitamin K is highest on this day. Vitamin K plays a pivotal role in regulation and control of the important clotting factors in the coagulation pathway that helps in stopping bleeding.)

And to those found faithful, our flesh (sin nature), in the age to come and in the ages beyond, in the new heaven and new earth, will be removed, cut off. For the unfaithful Christians and Old Testament Jews, at the end of the Millennial Reign of Christ, their sin nature will be removed, and *God will wipe away every tear from their eyes; there shall be no more death, nor sorrow, nor*

crying. There shall be no more pain, for the former things have passed away in the new heaven and earth.

,
The passage below clearly conveys that it is the Lord's provision (and His provision alone) that enables us to crucify the flesh and *circumcise our hearts* in this age. And because of our Lord Jesus' faithfulness, He has ***disarmed principalities and powers, and He has made a public spectacle of them, triumphing over them in it*** –

Colossians 2:11-13, 15, 18

*11 In Him you were also circumcised with the circumcision made without hands, by putting off the body of the sins of the flesh, by the circumcision of Christ, 12 buried with Him in baptism, in which you also were raised with Him through faith in the working of God, who raised Him from the dead. 13 And you, being dead in your trespasses and the uncircumcision of your flesh, He has made alive together with Him, having forgiven you all trespasses, ... 15 **Having disarmed principalities and powers, He made a public spectacle of them, triumphing over them in it.** ... 18 Let no one cheat you of your reward, taking delight in false humility and worship of angels, intruding into those things which he has not seen, vainly puffed up by his fleshly mind,*

That's it for this lesson. As you can see, Gen. 3:15 is rich in foundational truths regarding God's redemptive plan through the Seed of the woman. Jesus Christ will indeed crush the head of the serpent, praise God!

Parable of the vinedresser

The servants are the prophets of God, persecuted by the leaders of Israel:

Hebrews 11:35-40

35.... Others were tortured, not accepting deliverance, that they might obtain a better resurrection. 36 Still others had trial of mockings and scourgings, yes, and of chains and imprisonment. 37 They were stoned, they were sawn in two, were tempted, were slain with the sword. They wandered about in sheepskins and goatskins, being destitute, afflicted, tormented-- 38 of whom the world was not worthy. They wandered in deserts and mountains, in dens and caves of the earth. 39 And all these, having obtained a good testimony through faith, did not receive the promise, 40 God having provided something better for us, that they should not be made perfect apart from us.

Matthew 23:27-36

27 "Woe to you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! For you are like whitewashed tombs which indeed appear beautiful outwardly, but inside are full of dead men's bones and all uncleanness. 28 "Even so you also outwardly appear righteous to men, but inside you are full of hypocrisy and lawlessness. 29 "Woe to you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! Because you build the tombs of the prophets and adorn the monuments of the righteous, 30 "and say, 'If we had lived in the days of our fathers, we would not have been partakers with them in the blood of the prophets.' 31 "Therefore you are witnesses against yourselves that you are sons of those who murdered the prophets. 32 "Fill up, then, the measure of your fathers' guilt. 33 "Serpents, brood of vipers! How can you escape the condemnation of hell? 34 "Therefore, indeed, I send you prophets, wise men, and scribes: some of them you will kill and crucify, and some of them you will scourge in your synagogues and persecute from city to city, 35 "that on you may come all the righteous blood shed on the earth, from the blood of righteous Abel to the blood of Zechariah, son of Berechiah, whom you murdered between the temple and the altar. 36 "Assuredly, I say to you, all these things will come upon this generation.

Zechariah, son of high priest Berechiah (Jehoiada):

After the high priest Berechiah (Jehoiada) died, the Israelite priests served idols. God sends Zechariah, son of high priest Berechiah, to warn them and they stoned him to death.

2 Chronicles 24:18-22

18 Therefore they left the house of the LORD God of their fathers, and served wooden images and idols; and wrath came upon Judah and Jerusalem because of their trespass. 19 Yet He sent

prophets to them, to bring them back to the LORD; and they testified against them, but they would not listen. 20 Then the Spirit of God came upon Zechariah the son of Jehoiada the priest, who stood above the people, and said to them, "Thus says God: 'Why do you transgress the commandments of the LORD, so that you cannot prosper? Because you have forsaken the LORD, He also has forsaken you.' " 21 *So they conspired against him, and at the command of the king they stoned him with stones in the court of the house of the LORD. 22 Thus Joash the king did not remember the kindness which Jehoiada his father had done to him, but killed his son; and as he died, he said, "The LORD look on it, and repay!"*

Elijah:

Elijah was a prophet sent by God to warn Ahab to turn away from Baal worship. Elijah was pursued by Ahab and his wife, Jezebel.

1Kings 16:30; 19:1,2

30 Now Ahab the son of Omri did evil in the sight of the LORD, more than all who were before him.

19:1 And Ahab told Jezebel all that Elijah had done, also how he had executed all the prophets with the sword. 2 Then Jezebel sent a messenger to Elijah, saying, "So let the gods do to me, and more also, if I do not make your life as the life of one of them by tomorrow about this time."

Isaiah:

Isaiah was a prophet sent by God to warn Israel to repent or there will be judgement. According to historical records, Isaiah (whose name means “the Lord saves”) was sawn in two by the King Manasseh of Judah.

Read the parable of the vineyard in Isaiah 5:1-7.

Jeremiah:

Jeremiah’s name means “whom Jehovah appointed.” He is known as the weeping prophet. He warned the Israelites that God would severely chastise them for their unfaithfulness. God’s hedge of protection would be removed from the nation and they would be taken into Babylonian captivity.

Jeremiah frequently opposed the king’s favored prophets, gaining more adversaries in high places. During a lull in the final days of the siege on Jerusalem, Jeremiah left the city presumably to visit his family at Anathoth. He was apprehended and arrested in Benjamin, accused of

desertion, beaten, and imprisoned ([Jeremiah 37:11–16](#)). After appealing to King Zedekiah, Jeremiah was placed under house arrest. While there, Jeremiah’s enemies had him cast into an abandoned cistern to die, but he was rescued by an Ethiopian named Ebed-Melech ([Jeremiah 38](#)).

With regards to how Jeremiah died, the Scriptures leave no record. Church tradition suggests that Jeremiah was stoned to death in Egypt by the Jews.

New Testament Jewish saints warned Israel to repent, and the Jewish leaders persecuted them also:

Stephen: stoned to death.

Peter: was crucified, possibly upside down.

John 21:18-19

18 "Most assuredly, I say to you, when you were younger, you girded yourself and walked where you wished; but when you are old, you will stretch out your hands, and another will gird you and carry you where you do not wish." 19 This He spoke, signifying by what death he would glorify God. And when He had spoken this, He said to him, "Follow Me."

Paul: imprisoned and executed, possibly beheaded.

Jesus tells us to expect persecution.

John 15:18-20

18 "If the world hates you, you know that it hated Me before it hated you. 19 "If you were of the world, the world would love its own. Yet because you are not of the world, but I chose you out of the world, therefore the world hates you. 20 "Remember the word that I said to you, 'A servant is not greater than his master.' If they persecuted Me, they will also persecute you. If they kept My word, they will keep yours also.

2Timothy 3:12

"Yes, and all who desire to live godly in Christ Jesus will suffer persecution."

The Kingdom of God

In Scripture the Kingdom of God, and the Kingdom of heaven, and the Millennial Reign of Christ from the heavens, and the Kingdom in eternity future, **all refer to the same Kingdom.**

It was this Kingdom which was in view in eternity past when Lucifer and angelic beings ruled from the heavens over the earth. And *the earth* and the sanctuaries associated with it were then ruined (Gen. 1:1, 2a).

It was this Kingdom which was in view in in the seven-day restoration of the ruined kingdom (Gen. 1:2b-25).

It was this Kingdom which was in view when man was created to rule the restored kingdom (Gen. 1:26-28).

It was this kingdom which was in view when the incumbent ruler (Satan) brought about man's fall so that man would be disqualified to rule this kingdom.

Matthew 4:1-2, 8-11

1 Then Jesus was led up by the Spirit into the wilderness to be tempted by the devil. 2 And when He had fasted forty days and forty nights, afterward He was hungry. ... 8 Again, the devil took Him up on an exceedingly high mountain, and showed Him all the kingdoms of the world and their glory. 9 And he said to Him, "All these things I will give You if You will fall down and worship me." 10 Then Jesus said to him, "Away with you, Satan! For it is written, 'You shall worship the LORD your God, and Him only you shall serve.' " 11 Then the devil left Him, and behold, angels came and ministered to Him.

Recall that Adam is *a type of Him who was to come* (Rom. 5:24).

The **first man, the first Adam**, appears in Genesis; **the second Man, the last Adam** (Christ), appears in Matthew. And it is very interesting that Satan appears **both** times; and the temptations have to do with a kingdom **both** times, the same kingdom!

In both temptation accounts in Gen. 3 and Matt. 4., it is the kingdom which Satan has ruled from the beginning, that is in view.

The Book of Genesis Part 2

Lesson Nine – In Pain You Shall Bring Forth Children

Objective of Lesson Nine: Understanding the phrase *In pain you shall bring forth children; Your desire shall be for your husband, And he shall rule over you*

In our previous lesson, we examined the spiritual significance of the woman's Seed crushing the head of the seed of the serpent in Gen.3:15. And despite Satan's attempts to corrupt the bloodline of the Seed of the woman, the Lord will be victorious, and Christ's Kingdom will come.

At the cross, the heel of God's Son was bruised while Satan's head (headship, rulership) was crushed. This refers to Satan's headship with regards to the rulership of the Kingdom. In that Day, the Seventh Day Sabbath Rest out ahead, Satan's crown will be removed and given to the Seed of the Woman, Christ! This is the conclusion of the enmity between the seed of the serpent and the Seed of the Woman. The Lord's will, **will be done and His Kingdom will come in that Day.**

Matthew 6:9-10

9 "In this manner, therefore, pray: Our Father in heaven, Hallowed be Your name. 10 Your kingdom come. Your will be done On earth as it is in heaven.

We reviewed examples in Scripture where the serpent and his seed attempted to destroy the Seed of the Woman –

Pharoah, Haman, King Balak and King Herod were some of the examples.

Genesis 3:16-19

16 To the woman He said: "I will greatly multiply your sorrow and your conception; In pain you shall bring forth children; Your desire shall be for your husband, And he shall rule over you." 17 Then to Adam He said, "Because you have heeded the voice of your wife, and have eaten from the tree of which I commanded you, saying, 'You shall not eat of it': "Cursed is the ground for your sake; In toil you shall eat of it All the days of your life. 18 Both thorns and thistles it shall bring forth for you, And you shall eat the herb of the field. 19 In the sweat of your face you shall eat bread Till you return to the ground, For out of it you were taken; For dust you are, And to dust you shall return."

What was the woman's judgment for disobeying God?

In pain the woman would *bring forth children*. The word *children* originates from the root word to build, establish a house. In our Gen. Part 1 study, we learned that the earth coming up out of the water (place of death) on the third day is compared to the birth of a baby twisting and coming out of the womb –

Psalm 90:1-4

1 A Prayer of Moses, the man of God. Lord, You have been our dwelling place in all generations. 2 Before the mountains were born Or You gave birth to the earth [whole earth] and the world [habitable part of earth; country], Even from everlasting to everlasting, You are God. 3 You turn man back into dust And say, "Return, O children of men." 4 For a thousand years in Your sight Are like yesterday when it passes by, Or as a watch in the night. NASB

Gave birth (bring forth) in v.2 is the Hebrew word *khool* which means to twist or writhe in pain (especially of parturition-childbirth).

Isaiah 66:8-9

8 Who has heard such a thing? Who has seen such things? Shall the earth be made to give birth in one day? Or shall a nation be born at once? For as soon as Zion was in labor, She gave birth to her children. 9 Shall I bring to the time of birth, and not cause delivery?" says the LORD. "Shall I who cause delivery shut up the womb?" says your God.)

In the passage above, what nation was *born at once* and *gave birth*?

This passage describes the house of Israel and their future delivery (*in labor*) at the end of the tribulation. (And as mentioned earlier, the word *children* originates from the root word to build, establish a house.)

Israel will endure much suffering during the tribulation period but those saved out of the tribulation will be brought into the land as suffering always precedes glory.

The earth being brought forth out of the waters is described as a painful twisting action, perhaps depicting the earth as twisting, and having rotation as it came up out of the waters. But there is a deeper spiritual meaning and pattern set here by the third day.

The third day in Scripture points to resurrection, being raised in newness of life to follow Christ. And as previously mentioned, suffering **must precede glory**. We must crucify our flesh, take up our cross and follow Him in order to be found faithful at the JSOC (Judgment Seat of Christ) and receive His glory, to co-reign with Christ in His coming Kingdom.

Romans 6:3-5

3 Or do you not know that as many of us as were baptized into Christ Jesus were baptized into His death? 4 Therefore we were buried with Him through baptism into death, that just as Christ was raised from the dead by the glory of the Father, even so we also should walk in newness of life. 5 For if we have been

united together in the likeness of His death, certainly we also shall be in the likeness of His resurrection,

Jesus was resurrected in a resurrected body of flesh and bones, animated by the Spirit, not the blood. After His resurrection, He appeared to His disciples on the road to Emmaus. The disciples didn't recognize the Lord at first –

Luke 24:13-21, 25-27, 30-33, 44-46

*13 Now behold, two of them were traveling that same day to a village called Emmaus, which was seven miles from Jerusalem. 14 And they talked together of all these things which had happened. 15 So it was, while they conversed and reasoned, that Jesus Himself drew near and went with them. 16 But their eyes were restrained, so that they did not know Him. 17 And He said to them, "What kind of conversation is this that you have with one another as you walk and are sad?" 18 Then the one whose name was Cleopas answered and said to Him, "Are You the only stranger in Jerusalem, and have You not known the things which happened there in these days?" 19 And He said to them, "What things?" So they said to Him, "The things concerning Jesus of Nazareth, who was a Prophet mighty in deed and word before God and all the people, 20 "and how the chief priests and our rulers delivered Him to be condemned to death, and crucified Him. 21 "But we were hoping that it was He who was going to redeem Israel. Indeed, besides all this, today is the third day since these things happened. ... 25 Then He said to them, "O foolish ones, and slow of heart to believe in all that the prophets have spoken! 26 "Ought not the Christ to have suffered these things and to enter into His glory?" 27 And beginning at Moses and all the Prophets, He expounded to them in all the Scriptures the things concerning Himself. ... 30 Now it came to pass, as He sat at the table with them, that He took bread, blessed and broke it, and gave it to them. 31 Then their eyes were **opened and they knew Him**; and He vanished from their sight. 32 And they said to one another, "Did not our heart burn within us while He talked with us on the road, and while **He opened the Scriptures to us**?" 33 So they rose up that very hour and returned to Jerusalem, and found the eleven and those who were with them gathered together, ... 44 Then He said to them, "These are the words which I spoke to you while I was still with you, that all things must be fulfilled which were written in the Law of Moses and the Prophets and the Psalms concerning Me." 45 And He*

opened their understanding, that they might comprehend the Scriptures.

46 Then He said to them, "Thus it is written, and thus it was necessary for the Christ to suffer and to rise from the dead the third day,

There is much in this passage to make note of.

What allowed the disciples to have their eyes opened?

The disciples' eyes were *opened*, and they knew Him **after they ate the bread.**

Jesus is the bread of life, and He is the incarnate Word of God. And it was only after His body (the Bread) was broken on the cross that the Holy Spirit was sent to teach us and open our eyes to the Scriptures so that we may know Him! In this passage, the disciples' eyes *were opened, and they knew Him* after hearing the words of Jesus.

The Greek word *knew* in this passage is the verb form of epignosis (*epiginōskō*). It means to become thoroughly acquainted with, to know thoroughly; to know accurately, know well.

It refers to having a mature knowledge regarding the Lord's coming Kingdom out ahead.

Please take note of the word *opened* which is mentioned three times in the above passage.

The word *opened* means to **open by dividing, the opening of the womb by the first-born son.**

If we rightly divide (open) the Word of God, we can become first-born sons, joint heirs with Christ in His coming Kingdom.

Regarding the church, recall that becoming a first-born son is synonymous with becoming the Bride of Christ, joint-heir with Christ. Do you recall what the rights of the first-born son are?

The rights of the firstborn son are the following:

- **Receive a double portion of the inheritance**
- **Ruler (king) of the family**
- **Priest of the family**

The double portion is rulership with Christ in His 1000-year reign from the heavenly portion of His Kingdom over the earthly portion of His Kingdom (with no sin nature I might add!).

The position of being a ruler (king) and priest of the family is promised to the faithful Christian at the Judgment Seat of Christ:

Revelation 1:5-6

5 and from Jesus Christ, the faithful witness, the firstborn from the dead, and the ruler over the kings of the earth. To Him who loved us and washed us from our sins in His own blood, 6 and has made us kings and priests to His God and Father, to Him be glory and dominion forever and ever. Amen.

Romans 8:16-17

16 The Spirit Himself bears witness with our spirit that we are children of God, 17 and if children, then heirs--heirs of God and joint heirs with Christ, if indeed we suffer with Him, that we may also be glorified together.

In an earlier lesson we learned that there will be three Firstborn sons.

Israel

ruling in the earthly portion of the Millennial Kingdom.

The Bride of Christ (taken from the Church)

reigning from the heavenly portion of the Millennial Kingdom.

Jesus Christ

the King of kings and Lord of lords reigning over His entire glorious Millennial Kingdom, where all will be restored (man and the land)!

These three firstborn sons, raised up on Adam's name, will enter and occupy the Kingdom of the Heavens and the Land of Israel, the locations from which rulership will take place, with the only begotten Firstborn Son, Jesus, in both locations. All firstborn sons must first endure much suffering in order to receive glory (rulership) in His coming Kingdom.

So then, the phrase *in pain you shall bring forth children* points to an important teaching in Scripture -**suffering must precede glory**.

As mentioned previously, we must crucify our flesh (that is our suffering), take up our cross, and follow Him in order to be found faithful at the Judgment Seat of Christ and receive His glory, to co-reign with Christ in His coming Kingdom.

Returning to Gen. 3, what else did God say would happen to the woman and can you see the spiritual significance of this?

16 To the woman He said: "I will greatly multiply your sorrow and your conception; In pain you shall bring forth children; Your desire shall be for your husband, And he shall rule over you."

Ephesians 5:22-26, 30, 32-33

22 Wives, submit to your own husbands, as to the Lord. 23 For the husband is head of the wife, as also Christ is head of the church; and He is the Savior of the

body. 24 Therefore, just as the church is subject to Christ, so let the wives be to their own husbands in everything. 25 Husbands, love your wives, just as Christ also loved the church and gave Himself for her, 26 that He might sanctify and cleanse her with the washing of water by the word, ... 30 For we are members of His body, of His flesh and of His bones. ... 32 This is a great mystery, but I speak concerning Christ and the church. 33 Nevertheless let each one of you in particular so love his own wife as himself, and let the wife see that she respects her husband.

In the passage above, what are the wives instructed to do in marriage?

Our desire should be for our husband. We are to honor the marriage covenant and be under the headship of our husband, as God does indeed work through the husband first in a marriage.

Elisabeth Elliot compared the phrase *Wives, submit to your own husbands* to wives submitting to Christ. She challenged women to envision Christ standing behind their husband when addressing their spouse. When we submit to our husbands, we are submitting to Christ.

I found this to be very helpful in submitting to my husband. I am sure you ladies have experienced that consistently submitting to our husbands can be a challenge at times. But we must look at it as an act of faithful obedience unto Jesus –

Elisabeth Elliot writes the following regarding submission to your husband –

“Etymologically [looking at the basic meaning of the word], submission means surrender to another, but in the evangelical sense it means that I conduct myself actually among men as the submissive child of my Father in heaven.”

(Oswald Chambers’ definition)

Let's look first at the Son of God, perfect in His submission to His Father.

His whole life on earth demonstrated an unconditional surrender to that glorious will: "Then said I, Lo, I come (in the volume of the book it is written of me,) to do thy will, O God" (Hebrews 10:7).

Why should a wife submit to a husband rather than the reverse? Are we not equal? No, not equal in the sense of interchangeable. The heart of the matter is a mystery: the mystery of Christ and the Church. Try reading Ephesians 5:22-24, reversing the nouns. It's nonsense. God arranged husbands and wives in different positions, each representing a tremendous verity: the husband represents Christ; the wife, the Church, His Bride. **This is a divine assignment**, not chosen, earned, or deserved by either husband or wife, not conferred by either on the other, but designated by God Himself. I am thankful for this arrangement because I know it is a revelation of divine wisdom and love, given for our freedom and peace.

And we might also add that submitting to our husbands is our umbrella of protection, as it is God's design for the marriage relationship.

In Gen. 2:16, the phrase *Your desire shall be for your husband, And he shall rule over you*, points to another marriage relationship in the age to come, in the Millennial Reign of Christ. Not only should our desire be for our husband in this age but also for our Bridegroom Jesus Christ, in the age to come, as the Woman - Adam's wife - also forms a type of those who will be Christ's Bride.

Recall that Adam is a type of Him who is to come, the last Adam, Jesus Christ –

Romans 5:14

14 Nevertheless death reigned from Adam to Moses, even over those who had not sinned according to the likeness of the transgression of Adam, who is a type of Him who was to come.

1 Corinthians 15:45

45 And so it is written, "The first man Adam became a living being." The last Adam became a life-giving spirit.

And those Christians found faithful at the Judgment Seat of Christ, that have *desired* to follow Jesus Christ (our Bridegroom), will enter into a marriage relationship with the last Adam, Jesus Christ, in the age to come. We should submit under His rulership, in this age. (And we will be under His rulership in the age to come also.)

The word *desire* originates from the root word to *run after, long for*. Can you recall women in the Old Testament that exemplified the pursuit of their husbands, typifying the pursuit of Christ?

We can see a beautiful picture of the Shulamite woman pursuing the love of her life, her King, in the Book of Solomon. (We discussed this in our Ruth Bible study, but review is always good.) As you read these passages below, take note that the Shulamite woman represents the Bride of Christ, Christians in pursuit of their Bridegroom, Jesus Christ, represented by the King. (The daughters of Jerusalem represent Christians **not** in pursuit of their King.)

An interesting fact is that the word Solomon means peaceful. Solomon typifies Christ in His coming Kingdom.

Isaiah 9:6

*6 For unto us a Child is born, Unto us a Son is given; And the government will be upon His shoulder. And His name will be called Wonderful, Counselor, Mighty God, Everlasting Father, **Prince of Peace**.*

The word Shulamite is the feminine name for Solomon and also means peace, peaceful. And Christians in pursuit of their King, like the Shulamite woman,

will be joined together as one with our Prince of Peace. And we will be like Him in all of His glory!

Words of the Shulamite woman:

Song of Solomon 1:2-4; 7-8

*2 Let him kiss me with the kisses of his mouth--For your love is better than wine.
3 Because of the fragrance of your good ointments, Your name is ointment poured forth; Therefore the virgins love you. 4 Draw me away!... 7 Tell me, O you whom I love, **Where you feed your flock**, Where you make it rest at noon. For why should I be as one who veils herself By the flocks of your companions?*

Words of the King:

8 If you do not know, O fairest among women, Follow in the footsteps of the flock, And feed your little goats Beside the shepherds' tents.

In v.8, where does her beloved (the King), answer where He can be found? Where does He feed His flock?

He tells her to *Follow in the footsteps of the flock..., Beside the shepherds' tents.*

The word *shepherd* means one who nourishes, protects, leads, and cares for the flock. It can be used figuratively as one who rules and teaches.

The flock represent Christians in pursuit of the King and His coming Kingdom, feeding in the safety of our King – The Good Shepherd (John 10:14; Psalm 23). The shepherds are those led by the Holy Spirit, who God uses to guide, teach, and lead the flock, bringing them to a place of protection from the wolves (false teachers that pervert His message of His coming Kingdom) –

Act 20:28-30

28 "Therefore take heed to yourselves and to all the flock, among which the Holy Spirit has made you overseers, to shepherd the church of God which He purchased with His own blood. 29 "For I know this, that after my departure savage wolves will come in among you, not sparing the flock. 30 "Also from among yourselves men will rise up, speaking perverse things, to draw away the disciples after themselves.

Tent means dwelling place, tabernacle, so the King is telling her to go *Beside the shepherds' tents*, where she will find protection.

We can also see Ruth as a type of someone in pursuit of Christ. Ruth faithfully followed the instructions of Boaz, her Kinsman Redeemer, who is a type of Christ.

Genesis 3:17-19

17 Then to Adam He said, "Because you have heeded the voice of your wife, and have eaten from the tree of which I commanded you, saying, 'You shall not eat of it': "Cursed is the ground for your sake; In toil you shall eat of it All the days of your life. 18 Both thorns and thistles it shall bring forth for you, And you shall eat the herb of the field. 19 In the sweat of your face you shall eat bread Till you return to the ground, For out of it you were taken; For dust you are, And to dust you shall return."

What did God say would happen as a consequence of Adam *heeding the voice of his wife*?

The ground is cursed and Adam is told *In toil you shall eat of it All the days of your life*. The Hebrew word for *ground* is *adama* which means land, earth.

Adama comes from the root word *to be red* ('*ādām*). (Recall that the name Adam comes from the same root word '*ādām*. Adam was created from the dust of the earth **before** the earth was cursed.)

So, not only was God's creation Man, the Man and the Woman, in a ruined state, but the newly restored earth over which the Man and the Woman were to rule together was also ruined!

Romans 8:18-23

18 For I consider that the sufferings of this present time are not worthy to be compared with the glory which shall be revealed in us. 19 For the earnest expectation of the creation eagerly waits for the revealing of the sons of God. 20 For the creation was subjected to futility, not willingly, but because of Him who subjected it in hope; 21 because the creation itself also will be delivered from the bondage of corruption into the glorious liberty of the children of God. 22 For we know that the whole creation groans and labors with birth pangs together until now. 23 Not only that, but we also who have the firstfruits of the Spirit, even we ourselves groan within ourselves, eagerly waiting for the adoption, the redemption of our body.

According to this passage, when will the *cursed* earth (*creation*) be restored?

The creation, which includes the cursed earth, will be restored *when the sons of God* are revealed. The word son in this verse is the Greek word *huios*, which refers to a mature son, a spiritually mature son.

Sons of God denotes first born sons, faithful Christians that become joint heirs with Christ in His glorious Kingdom out ahead. In that Day, the *glory shall be revealed in us*.

And remember that should we be found faithful to become Christ's Bride, we will be like Him, in all of His glory! We will receive the rights of the firstborn discussed previously. This is why Paul states *that the sufferings of this present*

*time are not worthy **to be compared with the glory which shall be revealed in us.***

So, there is an association then between the redemption of Man and the redemption of the ruined creation that had previously been restored.

According to Gen. 3:17, what else did God tell Adam after the ground was cursed?

God said *In toil [sorrow; labor] you shall eat of it All the days of your life.* Man would have to work to till the ground and yield food. And man must work to receive their spiritual food also. Studying the Scriptures and rightly dividing His Word is hard work but it is God's heavenly manna, the Word of God, that sustains us spiritually –

Jeremiah 15:16

*Your words were found and I ate them,
And Your words became for me a joy and the delight of my heart;
For I have been called by Your name,
O LORD God of hosts.*

John 6:63

It is the Spirit who gives life; the flesh profits nothing; the words that I have spoken to you are spirit and are life.

Job 23:12

*“I have not departed from the command of His lips;
I have treasured the words of His mouth more than my necessary food.*

Isaiah 55:10-11

*“For as the rain and the snow come down from heaven,
And do not return there without watering the earth
And making it bear and sprout,
And furnishing seed to the sower and bread to the eater;
So will My word be which goes forth from My mouth;
It will not return to Me empty,
Without accomplishing what I desire,
And without succeeding in the matter for which I sent it.*

Psalm 107:8-9

8 Oh, that men would give thanks to the LORD for His goodness, And for His wonderful works to the children of men! 9 For He satisfies the longing soul, And fills the hungry soul with goodness.

These passages clearly state that it is His Word (the Word of God and the incarnate Word, Christ) that sustains us and provides us with “nutritious soul food”.

And here we can see that *toiling for food* implies suffering, and suffering precedes glory. Digging deep into the Scriptures takes time and discipline. It is our *toiling for food*. But toiling for our Spiritual food is a worthy and fruitful way to spend time. We should prioritize this discipline as it is what enables us to grow into mature first born sons.

Hebrews 6:11-12

*11 And we desire that each one of you show the same diligence to the full assurance of hope until the end, 12 that you do not become sluggish [slothful, lazy, stupid, dull], but imitate those who through faith and patience **inherit the promises.***

John 4:34

34 Jesus said to them, "My food is to do the will of Him who sent Me, and to finish His work.

What is Christ's food according to this passage?

For Christ, and for us, we are to do God's will, not our will –
"Your kingdom come. Your will be done On earth as it is in heaven." (Mat. 6:10).

We must do the Lord's will, crucify the flesh, take up our cross and follow Christ. And as we all know, this discipline can be both challenging and toiling at times.

Philippians 2:15-16

*15 that you may become blameless and harmless, children of God without fault in the midst of a crooked and perverse generation, among whom you shine as lights in the world, 16 **holding fast the word of life, so that I may rejoice in the day of Christ that I have not run in vain or labored in vain.***

It is the word of life that we are to hold fast to. The word of life is the Word regarding life in the age to come, the salvation of our soul, becoming a joint heir with Christ in His Kingdom.

Genesis 3:18-19

18 Both thorns and thistles it shall bring forth for you, And you shall eat the herb of the field. 19 In the sweat of your face you shall eat bread Till you return to the ground, For out of it you were taken; For dust you are, And to dust you shall return."

After the ground was cursed, what did it bring forth?

The cursed ground brought forth thorns and thistles. Remember, Jesus wore a crown of thorns upon His head at Calvary. This is a picture of Jesus, our Passover Lamb, taking the sins of the world upon Himself –

John 19:2

2 And the soldiers twisted a crown of thorns and put it on His head, and they put on Him a purple robe.

2Corinthians 5:21

21 For He made Him who knew no sin to be sin for us, that we might become the righteousness of God in Him.

Thorns and thistles hinder fruit production, leaving the land desolate.

Isaiah 32:12-15

*12 People shall mourn upon their breasts For the pleasant fields, for the fruitful vine. 13 **On the land of my people will come up thorns and briers**, Yes, on all the happy homes in the joyous city; 14 Because the palaces will be forsaken, The bustling city will be deserted. The forts and towers will become lairs forever, A joy of wild donkeys, a pasture of flocks-- 15 Until the Spirit is poured upon us from on high, And the wilderness becomes a fruitful field, And the fruitful field is counted as a forest.*

How is the land of Israel described in this passage and when will it be restored and become *a fruitful field*?

In Gen. 3:18 we read *In the sweat of your face you shall eat bread*. The word *sweat* in Gen. 3:18 is mentioned only once in Scripture. It comes from the root word *tremble, quiver, be in terror*. And perhaps we can see the correlation between *sweat* and reverential fear of the Lord bringing forth wisdom –

Psalm 111:10

10 The fear of the LORD is the beginning of wisdom; A good understanding have all those who do His commandments. His praise endures forever.

The phrase *In the sweat [tremble] of your face you shall eat bread* also points to the following verse –

Phillippians 2:12

*12 Therefore, my beloved, as you have always obeyed, not as in my presence only, but now much more in my absence, **work out your own salvation with fear and trembling;***

What type of salvation is this verse speaking of and how would we know?

And finally, we read of another consequence of sin in Gen. 3:19. Man would physically die and return to dust.

Psalm 39:4-7

4 "LORD, make me to know my end, And what is the measure of my days, That I may know how frail I am. 5 Indeed, You have made my days as handbreadths, And my age is as nothing before You; Certainly every man at his best state is but vapor. Selah 6 Surely every man walks about like a shadow; Surely they busy themselves in vain; He heaps up riches, And does not know who will gather them. 7 "And now, Lord, what do I wait for? My hope is in You.

To the natural man (the unredeemed man), the phrase *For dust you are, And to dust you shall return* in Gen. 3:19 seems hopeless and depressing. But for the Spirit man with an eternal perspective, our hope is in the Lord –

Psalm 103:15-19

15 As for man, his days are like grass; As a flower of the field, so he flourishes. 16 For the wind passes over it, and it is gone, And its place remembers it no more.

17 But the mercy of the LORD is from everlasting to everlasting On those who fear Him, And His righteousness to children's children, 18 To such as keep His covenant, And to those who remember His commandments to do them. 19 The LORD has established His throne in heaven, And His kingdom rules over all.

Genesis 3:20-21

20 And Adam called his wife's name Eve, because she was the mother of all living. 21 Also for Adam and his wife the LORD God made tunics of skin, and clothed them.

Why did Adam call his wife Eve and what is the spiritual significance of this name? (Hint: refer to Gen. 3:15.)

Eve means living. Adam responds to the promise of the seed of the woman (Gen. 3:15) by naming his wife appropriately. It is an act of faith for him to say, in essence, "indeed, my wife will be the mother of the living."

Next lesson we will study the first mention principal that redemption requires a substitute death and shed blood.

As you can see, there is so much to understand in Gen. 3 and digging deep into His Word is worthwhile and exciting!

The Book of Genesis Part 2

Lesson Ten – Substitute Death and Shed Blood

Objective of Lesson Ten: Substitute death and shed blood requirement for redemption

Last lesson we reviewed Gen. 3: 16 –

To the woman He said: "I will greatly multiply your sorrow and your conception; In pain you shall bring forth children; Your desire shall be for your husband, And he shall rule over you."

We saw that our desire should be for our husband. We are to honor the marriage covenant and be under the headship of our husband, as God does indeed work through the husband first in a marriage. We examined the spiritual significance of this passage in comparison to Eph. 5.

In Gen. 2:16, the phrase *Your desire shall be for your husband, And he shall rule over you*, points to another marriage relationship in the age to come, in the Millennial Reign of Christ. Not only should our desire be for our husband in this age but also for our Bridegroom Jesus Christ, in the age to come, as the Woman - Adam's wife - also forms a type of those who will be Christ's Bride.

We also learned that not only was God's creation Man (the Man and the Woman), in a ruined state, but the newly restored earth over which the Man and the Woman were to rule together was also ruined. The earth will be restored in Christ's Kingdom (Rom. 8:19).

God said *In toil* [sorrow; labor] *you shall eat of it All the days of your life*. Man would have to work to till the ground and yield food. And man must work to

receive their spiritual food also. Studying the Scriptures and rightly dividing His Word is hard work but it is God's heavenly manna, the Word of God, that sustains us spiritually.

We studied the spiritual significance of thorns and thistles (John 19:2; 2 Corinth. 5:21; Isa. Isa. 32:12-15).

In Gen. 3:18 we read *In the sweat of your face you shall eat bread*. The word *sweat* in Gen. 3:18 is mentioned only once in Scripture. It comes from the root word *tremble, quiver, be in terror*.

And finally, we learned that Eve means *living*. Adam responds to the promise of the seed of the woman (Gen. 3:15) by naming his wife appropriately. It is an act of faith for him to say, in essence, "indeed, my wife will be the mother of the living."

Genesis 3:20-21

20 And Adam called his wife's name Eve, because she was the mother of all living. 21 Also for Adam and his wife the LORD God made tunics of skin, and clothed them.

What did the Lord cover Adam and the woman with and do you recall the spiritual significance of this?

In Gen. 3:21, we see the first mention that redemption would require a substitute death and shed blood.

In an earlier lesson, we learned that man was initially created in the image of God, the three in one Trinity. Man is a tripartite being, comprised of spirit, soul, and body.

- The word for *spirit* in the New Testament is the Greek word *pneuma* or breath.
- The word for *soul* is *psychē*. It is often translated as life or heart, and is the vital force that keeps us alive. It is the place of our feelings, desires, affections, and aversions.
- The word *body* is translated *sōma*. It means the physical body.

(It must be reiterated that the words for spirit and soul are *never* used interchangeably in Scripture. Never! These are *two separate parts* of man's being. They are different words in the Hebrew and in the Greek. The salvation of the soul is always seen in the context of works while spiritual salvation is not, as it is a free gift. Also, these words are used in different verb tenses – **Salvation of the Spirit:** You have been saved. **Salvation of the soul:** You are being saved.)

After the fall of Man in the Garden of Eden sin affected all three parts of their being:

- Their human spirit died, and they were separated from God.
- Their soul became corrupted with a sinful nature. The soul now knew not only good but evil too.
- Their body lost the glory covering and so they could not be clothed in garments of splendor and majesty for rulership. Their bodies also started to physically die.

Remember, God initially created Man in His image for the purpose of rulership. Salvation is given as the only means by which Man can be placed back in a position to fulfill his created position, which is rulership in God's image (Gen.1:26).

And God's provision for salvation provides salvation for all three parts of man—spirit, soul, *and* body.

1Thessalonians 5:23

23 Now may the God of peace Himself sanctify you completely; and may your whole spirit, soul, and body be preserved blameless at the coming of our Lord Jesus Christ.

Adam's sin in the garden of Eden produced death. Since his physical body continued to live, and his soul continued to exist (although in a corrupted state), it is obvious that it was man's spirit which died the day he disobeyed and ate of the forbidden fruit. The death of Adam's spirit separated him from God. With an unredeemed, inanimate spirit, he was spiritually dead and alienated or separated from God. And we are all born *dead in trespasses and sins*, with a sin nature, carried down through the seed of Adam.

Ephesians 2:1

*1 And you He made alive, who were **dead in trespasses and sins**,*

Now for review, do you recall what two things are necessary for man's redemption?

Unredeemed man is a fallen creature, alienated from God. Two things are necessary for man's redemption:

3. Divine intervention.
4. Substitute death and shed blood, which is also provided for by Divine intervention.

God always requires a substitute death and shed blood for the salvation of fallen man and this principle was set in Gen. 3:21.

Jesus, our Passover Lamb, has died on the cross and shed His blood on the cross for our sins. In order for fallen man to be saved, God requires that man should believe in the Provision (the substitute death and shed blood Provision) which He gave – His Son Jesus.

Jesus, the Seed of the Woman, is the Lamb of God. He is the *substitute death and shed blood* provision that has taken away the sins of the world!

John 1:29

"The next day John saw Jesus coming toward him, and said, "Behold! The Lamb of God who takes away the sin of the world!"

The Lamb has died, His blood has been shed, and all that is left — all that can possibly be left — is for man to simply believe that which has already been done on his behalf. Eternal salvation is by grace (that which God does completely apart from human merit) through faith – through believing on God's Son. Once we *believe on the Lord Jesus Christ* then we are quickened or *made alive* spiritually and we are brought into the family of God, praise God.

Acts 16:30-31

*30 And he brought them out and said, "Sirs, what must I do to be saved?" 31 So they said, "**Believe on the Lord Jesus Christ, and you will be saved, you and your household.**"*

Can you recall where else in Scripture we see a substitute death and shed blood for redemption?

We can also read about a substitute death and shed blood being required for spiritual redemption with regards to Israel.

Exodus 12:3, 5, 7, 12-13

3 "Speak to all the congregation of Israel, saying: 'On the tenth of this month every man shall take for himself a lamb, according to the house of his father, a lamb for a household. ... 5 'Your lamb shall be without blemish, a male of the first

year. You may take it from the sheep or from the goats. ... 7 'And they shall take some of the blood and put it on the two doorposts and on the lintel of the houses where they eat it. ... 12 'For I will pass through the land of Egypt on that night, and will strike all the firstborn in the land of Egypt, both man and beast; and against all the gods of Egypt I will execute judgment: I am the LORD. 13 'Now the blood shall be a sign for you on the houses where you are. And when I see the blood, I will pass over you; and the plague shall not be on you to destroy you when I strike the land of Egypt.

We can also see that death and shed blood was required for the atonement of sins for God's people, Israel. And although the substitute death and shed blood seen in Gen. 3:21 (*the LORD God made tunics of skin*) points to spiritual redemption (gift of salvation), we can also see the importance of the blood for cleansing after a redeemed child sins.

Let's briefly review the type of cleansing provided for the spiritually redeemed children of Israel according to God's law.

On the Feast of Atonement, the sins committed, for a one-year period, by the **nation** of Israel were atoned (or covered) for by the blood.

Leviticus 16:2,5-10, 14-16, 20-22

2 and the LORD said to Moses: "Tell Aaron your brother not to come at just any time into the Holy Place inside the veil, before the mercy seat which is on the ark, lest he die; for I will appear in the cloud above the mercy seat.

5 "And he shall take from the congregation of the children of Israel two kids of the goats as a sin offering, and one ram as a burnt offering. 6 "Aaron shall offer the bull as a sin offering, which is for himself, and make atonement for himself and for his house. 7 "He shall take the two goats and present them before the LORD at the door of the tabernacle of meeting. 8 "Then Aaron shall cast lots for the two goats: one lot for the LORD and the other lot for the scapegoat. 9 "And Aaron shall bring the goat on which the LORD's lot fell, and offer it as a sin offering. 10 "But the goat on which the lot fell to be the scapegoat shall be presented alive before the LORD, to make atonement upon it, and to let it go as the scapegoat into the wilderness. ... 14 "He shall take some of the blood of the bull and sprinkle it with his finger on the mercy seat on the east side; and before the mercy seat he shall sprinkle some of the blood with his finger seven times. 15 "Then he shall kill the goat of the sin offering, which is for the people, bring its

blood inside the veil, do with that blood as he did with the blood of the bull, and sprinkle it on the mercy seat and before the mercy seat. 16 "So he shall make atonement for the Holy Place, because of the uncleanness of the children of Israel, and because of their transgressions, for all their sins; and so he shall do for the tabernacle of meeting which remains among them in the midst of their uncleanness. ... 20 "And when he has made an end of atoning for the Holy Place, the tabernacle of meeting, and the altar, he shall bring the live goat. 21 "Aaron shall lay both his hands on the head of the live goat, confess over it all the iniquities of the children of Israel, and all their transgressions, concerning all their sins, putting them on the head of the goat, and shall send it away into the wilderness by the hand of a suitable man. 22 "The goat shall bear on itself all their iniquities to an uninhabited land; and he shall release the goat in the wilderness.

Why was the bull offering required (v.6)? Describe the role of the two goats?

On the Feast of Atonement, the High Priest, of the Levitical order, would slay an animal and go into the Holy of Holies beyond the veil. The High Priest would then apply the blood over the mercy seat that covered the ark of the covenant, where God communed with the people. This practice atoned for, or covered, the sins of the nation of Israel for that year.

The priest would also place his hands on another animal, the scapegoat, sending the scapegoat away to carry the sins of the nation away, to be remembered no more. (This is where the expression, *they will be my scapegoat*, originated from.)

According to Jewish law, after they sinned, they were to also make a personal sin offering unto the Lord. The shed blood from that sin offering atoned or covered for their personal sins.

Leviticus 5:5-6

5 'And it shall be, when he is guilty in any of these matters, that he shall confess that he has sinned in that thing; 6 'and he shall bring his trespass offering to the LORD for his sin which he has committed, a female from the flock, a lamb or a kid of the goats as a sin offering. So the priest shall make atonement for him concerning his sin.

Why do you think a *substitute death and shed blood* was required?

The answer is given in **Leviticus 17:11** –

11 'For the life of the flesh is in the blood, and I have given it to you upon the altar to make atonement for your souls; for it is the blood that makes atonement for the soul.'

Notice that this provision was for the *atonement* of their souls, which is the salvation of their souls.

Hebrews 8:1, 3-5

1... We have such a High Priest [Jesus], who is seated at the right hand of the throne of the Majesty in the heavens, ... 3 For every high priest is appointed to offer both gifts and sacrifices. Therefore it is necessary that this One also have something to offer. 4 For if He were on earth, He would not be a priest, since there are priests who offer the gifts according to the law; 5 **who serve the copy and shadow of the heavenly things**, as Moses was divinely instructed when he was about to make the tabernacle. For He said, "See that you make all things according to the pattern shown you on the mountain."

According to this this passage, where is Christ now? And what was the earthly temple or tabernacle patterned after?

Hebrews 9:1-8

1 Then indeed, even the first covenant had ordinances of divine service and the earthly sanctuary. 2 For a tabernacle was prepared: the first part, in which was the lampstand, the table, and the showbread, which is called the sanctuary; 3 and behind the second veil, the part of the tabernacle which is called the Holiest of All, 4 which had the golden censer and the ark of the covenant overlaid on all sides with gold, in which were the golden pot that had the manna, Aaron's rod that budded, and the tablets of the covenant; 5 and above it were the cherubim of glory overshadowing the mercy seat. Of these things we cannot now speak in detail. 6 Now when these things had been thus prepared, the priests always went into the first part of the tabernacle, performing the services. 7 But into the second part the high priest went alone once a year, not without blood, which he offered for himself and for the people's sins committed in ignorance; 8 the Holy Spirit indicating this, that the way into the Holiest of All was not yet made manifest while the first tabernacle was still standing.

Please refer to the diagram on the next page of the temple in the wilderness below.

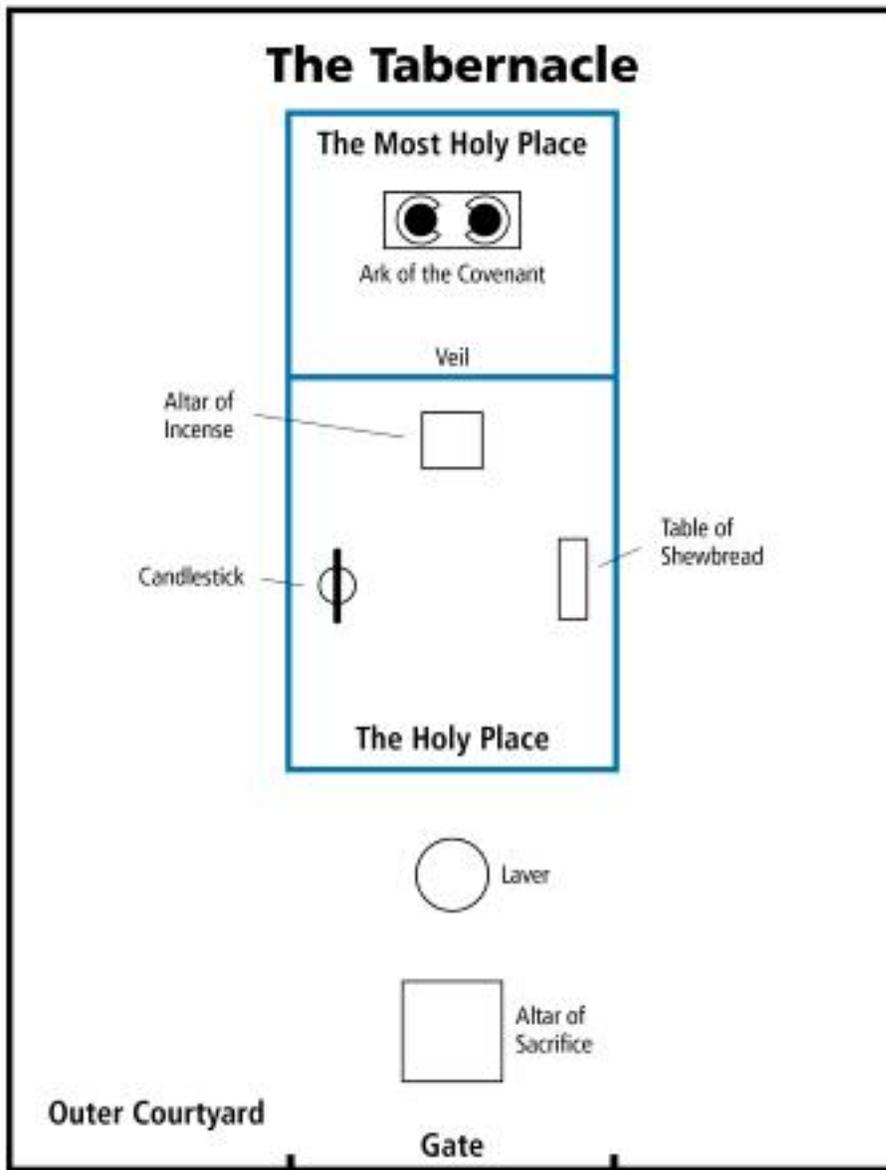


Diagram of the Tabernacle in the Wilderness

If we follow the pattern set in the Temple of God, we will be in the presence of the Lord and commune with the Lord, in an intimate way, in this age and in the age to come in His Kingdom, as His Bride –

Present our bodies as a living sacrifice upon the altar, crucifying our flesh. Romans 12:1

Wash ourselves at the bronze laver by confessing our sins to our High Priest Jesus and being washed in His Word. 1John 1:9; Eph. 5:26

After these actions, then we can enter the Holy Place within the temple where the incense, our prayers will be heard. And we will be in His Light given by the candelabra and eat of the shewbread, His Words that sustain us spiritually and allows us to mature spiritually. 1John 1:7; John 8:12, 8:48, 6:48; Rev. 8:4

After these actions, we can precede beyond the veil, into the Holy of Holies, where God communes with His people and where His glory resides. This Holy of Holies also pictures His glorious heavenly Kingdom out ahead, where we can be in that Day, should we be found faithful. And we will hear the Lord say, *I will meet with you, and I will speak with you from above the mercy seat, from between the two cherubim which are on the ark of the...* Heb. 6:19,20; Exo. 25:20-22

After they sacrificed their sin offering on the altar in the outer court, then they were to wash their hands and feet at the bronze laver before entering the inside of the temple, called the Holy Place. The bronze laver had both upper and lower parts to it.

Inside the Holy Place was the Golden Lampstand, the table of shewbread and the altar of incense.

Can you think of what the Golden Lampstand, and the table of shewbread, and the altar of incense might represent?

Golden Lampstand with seven candlesticks:

But if we walk in the light, as he is in the light, we have fellowship one with another, and the blood of Jesus Christ his Son cleanseth us from all sin. 1John 1:7

In him was life; and the life was the light of men. John 1:4

Shewbread:

I am the bread of life. John 6:48

I have not departed from the commandment of His lips; I have treasured the words of His mouth More than my necessary food. Job 23:12

Incense:

Let my prayer be set before You as incense, The lifting up of my hands as the evening sacrifice. Psalm 141:2

Now when He had taken the scroll, the four living creatures and the twenty-four elders fell down before the Lamb, each having a harp, and golden bowls full of incense, which are the prayers of the saints. Rev. 5:8

Remember, the sin offering, the washing at the bronze laver and the actions performed by the High Priest on the Day of Atonement were actions that

covered or atoned for the sins of Israel, **God's spiritually redeemed people**. Now Christ fulfilled all of these requirements once and for all at the cross –

Hebrews 10:1, 4-5, 10-11, 19-24

*1 For the law, having a shadow of the good things to come, and not the very image of the things, can never with these same sacrifices, which they offer continually year by year, make those who approach perfect. ... 4 For it is not possible that the blood of bulls and goats could take away sins. 5 Therefore, when He came into the world, He said: "Sacrifice and offering You did not desire, But a body You have prepared for Me. ... 10 By that will we have been **sanctified through the offering of the body of Jesus Christ once for all**. 11 And every priest stands ministering daily and offering repeatedly the same sacrifices, which can never take away sins. ... 19 Therefore, brethren, **having boldness to enter the Holiest [Holy of Holies] by the blood of Jesus, 20 by a new and living way which He consecrated for us, through the veil, that is, His flesh, 21 and having a High Priest over the house of God, 22 let us draw near with a true heart in full assurance of faith, having our hearts sprinkled from an evil conscience and our bodies washed with pure water. 23 Let us hold fast the confession of our hope without wavering, for He who promised is faithful. 24 And let us consider one another in order to stir up love and good works.***

From the above passage, please make a list of the differences between Israel's sacrifices and Christ's sacrifice.

Hebrews 6:11-12, 19-20

*11 And we desire that each one of you show the same diligence to the full assurance of hope until the end, 12 that you do not become sluggish, but imitate those who through faith and patience **inherit the promises**. ... 19 This hope we have as an anchor of the soul, both sure and steadfast, and which enters the Presence behind the veil, 20 where the forerunner has entered for us, even Jesus, having become High Priest forever according to the order of Melchizedek.*

The *hope* in vv.11,19, is the promise of receiving the reward of the inheritance, becoming a joint heir with Christ in the heavenly portion of His Kingdom (Col. 3:23).

What tribe was Jesus from and how is Jesus described in Hebrews 6:20?

The priests in the Old Covenant were to be from the tribe of Levi, under the order of Aaron. Christ, being from the tribe of Judah, became a *High Priest forever according to the order of Melchizedek*. The word *Melchizedek* comes from two root words. One root word means *King* and the other root word means *righteousness*. *Melchizedek* means King of Righteousness, King of Salem (Jerusalem).

Genesis 14:14, 18-20

14 Now when Abram heard that his brother was taken captive, he armed his three hundred and eighteen trained servants who were born in his own house, and went in pursuit as far as Dan. ... 18 Then Melchizedek king of Salem brought out bread and wine; he was the priest of God Most High. 19 And he blessed him and said: "Blessed be Abram of God Most High, Possessor of heaven and earth; 20 And blessed be God Most High, Who has delivered your enemies into your hand." And he gave him a tithe of all.

Hebrews 7:1-3, 11-16, 22-25, 27

*1 For this Melchizedek, king of Salem, priest of the Most High God, who met Abraham returning from the slaughter of the kings and blessed him, 2 to whom also Abraham gave a tenth part of all, first being translated "king of righteousness," and then also king of Salem, meaning "king of peace," 3 without father, without mother, without genealogy, having neither beginning of days nor end of life, but made like the Son of God, remains a priest continually. ... 11 Therefore, if perfection were through the Levitical priesthood (for under it the people received the law), what further need was there that another priest should rise according to the order of Melchizedek, and not be called according to the order of Aaron? 12 For the priesthood being changed, of necessity there is also a change of the law. 13 For He of whom these things are spoken belongs to another tribe, from which no man has officiated at the altar. 14 For it is evident that our Lord arose from Judah, of which tribe Moses spoke nothing concerning priesthood. 15 And it is yet far more evident if, **in the likeness of Melchizedek**, there arises another priest 16 who has come, not according to the law of a fleshly commandment, but according to the power of an endless life. ... 22 by so much more Jesus has become a surety of a better covenant. 23 Also there were many priests, because they were prevented by death from continuing. 24 But He, because He continues forever, has an unchangeable priesthood. 25 Therefore He is also able to save to the uttermost those who come to God through Him, since He always lives to make intercession for them. ... 27 who does not need daily, as those high priests, to offer up sacrifices, first for His own sins and then for the people's, for this He did once for all when He offered up Himself.*

How is *Melchizedek* described in the Gen.14:18-20 and Heb. 7: 1-5 passages and can you list the similitude between *Melchizedek* and Jesus Christ?

In this passage, Jesus Christ is described as *in the likeness of Melchizedek*. Melchizedek is a type of Christ as the King Priest in the Millennial Reign.

Melchizedek is also a priest of the *Most High God* to whom Abram paid a tithe to, after fighting the battle against the gentile nations to free his nephew, Lot. (Prophetically, this points to Jesus Christ defeating the gentile nations at the end of the tribulation, prior to establishing His Millennial Kingdom as King Priest.)

And *Melchizedek*, being a type of Christ, points to our Lord's current priestly ministry in this age, as we confess our sins.

Notice also that *Melchizedek*, was a king of *Salem*, meaning *king of peace*. Jesus is our Prince of Peace (Isa. 9:6). And *Melchizedek* is described as *having neither beginning of days nor end of life, made like the Son of God*. Jesus is the alpha and omega –

Revelation 1:8

"I am the Alpha and the Omega, the Beginning and the End," says the Lord, "who is and who was and who is to come, the Almighty."

What did *Melchizedek* bring out according to Gen. 14:18 and can you think of what this points to regarding Christ's provision?

1Corinthians 11:23-26

23 For I received from the Lord that which I also delivered to you: that the Lord Jesus on the same night in which He was betrayed took bread; 24 and when He had given thanks, He broke it and said, "Take, eat; this is My body which is broken for you; do this in remembrance of Me." 25 In the same manner He also took the cup after supper, saying, "This cup is the new covenant in My blood. This do, as often as you drink it, in remembrance of Me." 26 For as often as you eat this bread and drink this cup, you proclaim the Lord's death till He comes.

Now, since we are to be imitators of Christ, how can we follow Him? How are our sins removed? Please refer again to the temple diagram.

Romans 12:1

I beseech you therefore, brethren, by the mercies of God, that you present your bodies a living sacrifice, holy, acceptable to God, which is your reasonable service.

What is the first thing we are to do according to Romans 12:1?

We are to first make our bodies a living sacrifice unto the Lord, at the altar of sacrifice. And we are to view our flesh as the enemy of our soul.

1Peter 2:11

Beloved, I beg you as sojourners and pilgrims, abstain from fleshly lusts which war against the soul.....

Next, we are to wash ourselves at the bronze laver. We are to confess our sins before Jesus, our High Priest, according to 1John 1:9 –

1John 1:5-9

5 This is the message which we have heard from Him and declare to you, that God is light and in Him is no darkness at all. 6 If we say that we have fellowship with Him, and walk in darkness, we lie and do not practice the truth. 7 But if we walk in the light as He is in the light, we have fellowship with one another, and the blood of Jesus Christ His Son cleanses us from all sin. 8 If we say that we have no sin, we deceive ourselves, and the truth is not in us. 9 If we confess our sins, He is faithful and just to forgive us our sins and to cleanse us from all unrighteousness.

In the above passage, the outer courtyard would represent the place of darkness, where sin separates us from His Light.

In order to walk in His Light (the inner temple where the golden candlestick is placed), we must first *present our bodies a living sacrifice*, firmly tying our man of the flesh (our old man) to the horns of the altar in the outer court of the Tabernacle. Then we are to confess our sins to be cleansed at the bronze laver. And we are cleansed by the washing of water by the Word of God.

Ephesians 5:25-26

*25 Husbands, love your wives, just as Christ also loved the church and gave Himself for her, 26 that He might sanctify and **cleanse her with the washing of water by the word,***

Only after doing the above, can we enter the temple where His Light emanates from the Golden Candlestick. Remember, Jesus and His Word are the Light of the world –

Then Jesus spoke to them again, saying, "I am the light of the world. He who follows Me shall not walk in darkness, but have the light of life." John 8:12

And the shewbread is the Bread of Life, Jesus and His Word. It is His Word that sustains us spiritually and transform us –

"I am the bread of life." John 6:48

"It is the Spirit who gives life; the flesh profits nothing. The words that I speak to you are spirit, and they are life. John 6:63

And the third item mentioned in the Holy Place was the incense, which represents the prayers of the saints –

And the smoke of the incense, with the prayers of the saints, ascended before God from the angel's hand. Rev. 8:4

Recall that the priests were instructed to wash both their hands and feet at the bronze laver before entering the Holy Place of the tabernacle, or else they would die –

20 "When they go into the tabernacle of meeting, or when they come near the altar to minister, to burn an offering made by fire to the LORD, they shall wash with water, lest they die. 21 "So they shall wash their hands and their feet, lest they die. And it shall be a statute forever to them (Exo. 30: 20-21).

Christians still get their “feet and hands dirty” after they are spiritually redeemed. We become defiled daily, and we need a continual cleansing in this present life in order to minister (as kings and priests) in God's presence in His heavenly Kingdom out ahead

Jesus taught this to His disciples at the Last Supper –

John 13:3-10

3 Jesus, knowing that the Father had given all things into His hands, and that He had come from God and was going to God, 4 rose from supper and laid aside His garments, took a towel and girded Himself. 5 After that, He poured water into a basin and began to wash the disciples' feet, and to wipe them with the towel with which He was girded. 6 Then He came to Simon Peter. And Peter said to Him, "Lord, are You washing my feet?" 7 Jesus answered and said to him, "What I am doing you do not understand now, but you will know after this." 8 Peter said to Him, "You shall never wash my feet!" Jesus answered him, "If I do not wash you, you have no part with Me." 9 Simon Peter said to Him, "Lord, not my feet only, but also my hands and my head!" 10 Jesus said to him, "He who is bathed needs only to wash his feet, but is completely clean; and you are clean, but not all of you."

In v. 8, what did Jesus say would happen to Peter if he did not allow the Lord to wash his feet?

In the phrase *you have no part with Me*, Jesus is telling Peter that he would not have any fellowship with Jesus unless he is cleansed first. Also, the phrase *have no part* refers to having no part assigned to him in regards to rulership in Christ's coming Kingdom.

The word *bathed* in John 13:10 is the Greek verb *louō* . It means *to bathe* (the whole person).

The word *wash* in John 3:10 is the Greek word *niptō* and means to cleanse just part of the body (hands and feet).

Can you think why two different words (*bathed and wash*) are used in this passage?

Peter, a redeemed child of God, already was *bathed as a whole person*. Yet, as a disciple of Christ, he still spiritually “got his feet dirty,” so to speak. He still needed to continually wash himself, confess his sin and be cleansed by the blood of Christ (the blood that poured from His side at the cross), in order to have part in Christ’s coming Kingdom.

As mentioned previously, Jesus is currently sitting at the right hand of God the Father making intercession for us as our High Priest. And as we confess our sins to Him, His blood is applied on the mercy seat in the heavenly tabernacle and our sins will not be seen at the Judgment Seat of Christ.

If, however, the Christian lives a carnal life, abusing grace (Romans 6), not confessing their sins before their High Priest, then they will be judged for that sin and they will have no part in His Millennial Reign when He returns.

If we are going to be kings and priests unto our God and have a part with Him in His Kingdom, then we need to deal with the defilement of our sins in this life. And this is a continual process.

1John 1:6-7

6 If we say that we have fellowship with Him, and walk in darkness, we lie and do not practice the truth. 7 But if we walk in the light as He is in the light, we

have fellowship with one another, and the blood of Jesus Christ His Son cleanses us from all sin.

What cleanses us according to 1John 1:7?

It is the blood poured out of Jesus, our Passover Lamb, that cleanses us.

What can take away my sins – nothing but the blood of Jesus, what can make me whole again, nothing but the blood of Jesus.

And according to 1John1:7, as we walk in the Spirit, not in the flesh, we are walking in His Light and we have fellowship with Him.

After an Israelite presented a sin offering unto the Lord at the altar, and washed themselves at the bronze laver, then they could enter the sanctuary.

After our Passover Lamb was crucified, the Roman soldiers pierced His side. Do you recall what flowed out of His side?

John 19:34

34 But one of the soldiers pierced His side with a spear, and immediately blood and water came out.

And the blood that was poured out from His side after His death, is the blood that our High Priest Jesus pours over the mercy seat in the Holy of Holies, beyond the veil, in the heavenly tabernacle, after a believer confesses their sin.

(As previously mentioned, the water points to His Word, His provision for cleansing according to Eph. 5:26.)

We can see throughout Scripture, that it is the substitute death and shed blood that provided spiritual redemption for Adam and Eve, for Israel and for the Church. And it is the blood that cleanses a believer after they sin, enabling them to be raised in newness of life to receive the Salvation of their souls! How precious is His blood –

1Peter 1:18-19

*18 knowing that you were not redeemed with corruptible things, like silver or gold, from your aimless conduct received by tradition from your fathers, 19 but with the **precious blood of Christ**, as of a lamb without blemish and without spot.*

Hebrews 9: 2-5

For a tabernacle was prepared: the first part, in which was the lampstand, the table, and the showbread, which is called the sanctuary; 3 and behind the second veil, the part of the tabernacle which is called the Holiest of All, 4 which had the golden censer and the ark of the covenant overlaid on all sides with gold, in which were the golden pot that had the manna, Aaron's rod that budded, and the tablets of the covenant; 5 and above it were the cherubim of glory overshadowing the mercy seat.

What items in the Holy of Holies (*Holiest of All*) are mentioned in v.4?

The manna in the ark of the covenant points to God's provision for spiritual growth, the Word of God given in Scripture and the incarnate word, Jesus Christ. This is the heavenly manna. And perhaps this may point to the hidden manna promised to the overcomer in Rev 2:17 - "*He who has an ear, let him hear what the Spirit says to the churches. To him who overcomes I will give some of the **hidden manna** to eat...*"

The tablets of the covenant represent the tablets of the law or testimony, hence the tabernacle the Lord commanded Moses to build was called the tabernacle of testimony (Ex. 38:21).

In our next lesson, we will examine the spiritual significance of *Aaron's rod that budded*.

What overshadowed the mercy seat according to Heb.9:5?

The word *overshadowed* comes from a root word which means *shadow of death*. And if the blood was not applied over the mercy seat, the sins of Israel would not be atoned for, and the people would be cut off (separated or die) and not receive the inheritance out ahead.

Numbers 7:89

89 Now when Moses went into the tabernacle of meeting to speak with Him, he heard the voice of One speaking to him from above the mercy seat that was on the ark of the Testimony, from between the two cherubim; thus He spoke to him.

Exodus 25:20-22

20 "And the cherubim shall stretch out their wings above, covering the mercy seat with their wings, and they shall face one another; the faces of the cherubim shall be toward the mercy seat. 21 "You shall put the mercy seat on top of the ark, and in the ark you shall put the Testimony that I will give you. 22 "And there I will meet with you, and I will speak with you from above the mercy seat, from between the two cherubim which are on the ark of the Testimony, about everything which I will give you in commandment to the children of Israel.

According to the passages above, what is the location where God would speak to His people?

2Kings 19:15

"O LORD God of Israel, the One who dwells between the cherubim, You are God, You alone, of all the kingdoms of the earth. You have made heaven and earth.

Do you recall what God required to be poured over the mercy seat?

God required that the blood of a substitute sacrifice be applied over the mercy seat to atone for the sins of the people and thereby assure the communion between God and His people. And **the blood also made atonement for the Holy Place.**

Leviticus 16:15,16

*"Then he shall kill the goat of the sin offering, which is for the people, **bring its blood inside the veil**, do with that blood as he did with the blood of the bull, and **sprinkle it on the mercy seat and before the mercy seat.** 16 **"So he shall make atonement for the Holy Place, because of the uncleanness of the children of Israel, and because of their transgressions, for all their sins;** and so he shall do for the tabernacle of meeting which remains among them in the midst of their uncleanness.*

Now let's review some verses in the New Testament that follow the blood requirement for the church.

Romans 3:21-26

*21 But now the righteousness of God apart from the law is revealed, being witnessed by the Law and the Prophets, 22 even the righteousness of God, through faith in Jesus Christ, to all and on all who believe. For there is no difference; 23 for all have sinned and fall short of the glory of God, 24 being justified freely by His grace through the redemption that is in Christ Jesus, 25 whom God set forth as **a propitiation [mercy seat]** by His blood, through faith, to demonstrate His righteousness, because in His forbearance God had passed over the sins that were previously committed, 26 to demonstrate at the present time His righteousness, that He might be just and the justifier of the one who has faith in Jesus.*

Hebrews 10:19-21

19 Therefore, brethren, having boldness to enter the Holiest by the blood of Jesus, 20 by a new and living way which He consecrated for us, through the veil, that is, His flesh, 21 and having a High Priest over the house of God.

The word **propitiation** is the same Greek word used for mercy seat in Heb. 9:5 – *...above it were the cherubim of glory overshadowing the mercy.*

The mercy seat, or propitiation, denotes *a means of appeasement, a covering or atonement for sin.*

Jesus provided everything for our redemption –

He is the veil rent in two at the cross, the blood required to be poured over the mercy seat to prevent death, and He is the mercy seat! Man was separated from God by sin and man could only approach God by the blood.

When Christ died on the cross, the veil hanging in the temple was rent in two (Matt. 27:51).

Jesus went beyond the veil as our High Priest (Heb. 9: 11,12,24; 7:23-28), taking His blood and pouring it over the mercy seat in the heavenly

tabernacle. And by His sacrifice, He has provided the atonement (Heb. 10:11,12)!

As you can see, the principle requiring the **substitute death and shed blood** is set in Gen. 3 and even before that, as Christ our Passover Lamb was slain before the foundations of the world!

Revelation 13:8

8 All who dwell on the earth will worship him, whose names have not been written in the Book of Life of the Lamb slain from the foundation of the world.

So then, if we follow the pattern set in the Temple of God, we will be in the presence of the Lord and commune with the Lord, in an intimate way, in this age and in the age to come in His Kingdom, as His Bride –

- Present our bodies as a living sacrifice upon the altar, crucifying our flesh. Romans 12:1
- Wash ourselves at the bronze laver by confessing our sins to our High Priest Jesus and being washed in His Word. 1John 1:9; Eph. 5:26
- After these actions, then we can enter the Holy Place within the temple where the incense, our prayers will be heard. And we will be in His Light given by the candelabra and eat of the shewbread, His Words that sustain us spiritually and allows us to mature spiritually. 1John 1:7; John 8:12, 8:48, 6:48; Rev. 8:4
- After these actions, we can precede beyond the veil, into the Holy of Holies, where God communes with His people and where His glory resides. This Holy of Holies also pictures His glorious heavenly Kingdom out ahead, where we can be in that Day, should we be found faithful. And we will hear the Lord say, *I will meet with you, and I will speak with you from above the mercy seat, from between the two cherubim which are on the ark of the...*” Heb. 6:19,20; Exo. 25:20-22

Revelation 3:20-22

20 "Behold, I stand at the door and knock. If anyone hears My voice and opens the door, I will come in to him and dine with him, and he with Me. 21 "To him who overcomes I will grant to sit with Me on My throne, as I also overcame and sat down with My Father on His throne. 22 "He who has an ear, let him hear what the Spirit says to the churches." ' "

Next lesson we will finish up Gen. 3 and proceed forward into Gen. 4.

Praise God for His sacrifice - how precious is His blood!

The Book of Genesis Part 2

Lesson Eleven – Guarding the Access to God

Objective of Lesson Eleven: Guarding the access to God

In our previous lesson, we learned that God always requires a substitute death and shed blood for the salvation of fallen man and this principle was set in Gen. 3:21.

Jesus, our Passover Lamb, has died on the cross and shed His blood on the cross for our sins. In order for fallen man to be saved, God requires that man should believe in the Provision (the substitute death and shed blood Provision) which God gave – His Son Jesus.

Jesus, the Seed of the Woman, is the Lamb of God. He is the *substitute death and shed blood* provision that has taken away the sins of the world!

We also saw that death and shed blood was required for the atonement of sins for God's people, Israel. Throughout Scripture, we see that it is the substitute death and shed blood that provided redemption for Adam and Eve, for Israel and for the Church. It is our faith in the death and shed blood of Jesus as our Passover Lamb that gives us spiritual redemption. And it is the blood from His side at calvary that cleanses a believer after they sin. How precious is His blood –

1Peter 1:18-19

18 knowing that you were not redeemed with corruptible things, like silver or gold, from your aimless conduct received by tradition from your fathers, 19 but with the precious blood of Christ, as of a lamb without blemish and without spot.

We also examined the spiritual significance of the articles within the temple and beyond the veil, in the Holy of Holies.

If we follow the pattern set in the Temple of God, we will be in the presence of the Lord and commune with the Lord, in an intimate way, in this age and in the age to come in His Kingdom, as His Bride –

- Present our bodies as a living sacrifice upon the altar, crucifying our flesh. Romans 12:1
- Wash ourselves at the bronze laver by confessing our sins to our High Priest Jesus and being washed in His Word. 1John 1:9; Eph. 5:26
- After these actions, then we can enter the Holy Place within the temple where the incense, our prayers will be heard. And we will be in His Light given by the candelabra and eat of the shewbread, His Words that sustain us spiritually and allows us to mature spiritually. 1John 1:7; John 8:12, 8:48, 6:48; Rev. 8:4
- After these actions, we can precede beyond the veil, into the Holy of Holies, where God communes with His people and where His glory resides. This Holy of Holies also pictures His glorious heavenly Kingdom out ahead, where we can be in that Day, should we be found faithful. And we will hear the Lord say, *I will meet with you, and I will speak with you from above the mercy seat, from between the two cherubim which are on the ark of the...* Heb. 6:19, 20; Exo. 25:20-22

Today we will discuss the last item mentioned in the Holy of Holies - *Aaron's rod that budded*. Please read the passages below to see the significance of the budding rod and preceding events that necessitated the need for the budding rod.

Numbers 16:1-5, 9-11, 20-21, 23-26, 28-35, 37, 39-40

1 Now Korah the son of Izhar, the son of Kohath, the son of Levi, with Dathan and Abiram the sons of Eliab, and On the son of Peleth, sons of Reuben, took men; 2 and they rose up before Moses with some of the children of Israel, two hundred

and fifty leaders of the congregation, representatives of the congregation, men of renown. 3 They gathered together against Moses and Aaron, and said to them, "You take too much upon yourselves, **for all the congregation is holy, every one of them, and the LORD is among them. Why then do you exalt yourselves above the assembly of the LORD?**" 4 So when Moses heard it, he fell on his face; 5 and he spoke to Korah and all his company, saying, "Tomorrow morning the LORD will show who is His and who is holy, and will cause him to come near to Him. That one whom He chooses He will cause to come near to Him. ... 9 "Is it a small thing to you that the God of Israel has separated you from the congregation of Israel, to bring you near to Himself, to do the work of the tabernacle of the LORD, and to stand before the congregation to serve them; 10 "and that He has brought you near to Himself, you and all your brethren, the sons of Levi, with you? And are you seeking the priesthood also? 11 "Therefore you and all your company are gathered together against the LORD. And what is Aaron that you complain against him?" ... 20 And the LORD spoke to Moses and Aaron, saying, 21 "Separate yourselves from among this congregation, that I may consume them in a moment." ... 23 So the LORD spoke to Moses, saying, 24 "Speak to the congregation, saying, 'Get away from the tents of Korah, Dathan, and Abiram.' " 25 Then Moses rose and went to Dathan and Abiram, and the elders of Israel followed him. 26 And he spoke to the congregation, saying, "Depart now from the tents of these wicked men! Touch nothing of theirs, lest you be consumed in all their sins." ... 28 And Moses said: "By this you shall know that the LORD has sent me to do all these works, for I have not done them of my own will. 29 "If these men die naturally like all men, or if they are visited by the common fate of all men, then the LORD has not sent me. 30 "But if the LORD creates a new thing, and the earth opens its mouth and swallows them up with all that belongs to them, and they go down alive into the pit, then you will understand that these men have rejected the LORD." 31 Now it came to pass, as he finished speaking all these words, that the ground split apart under them, 32 and the earth opened its mouth and swallowed them up, with their households and all the men with Korah, with all their goods. 33 So they and all those with them went down alive into the pit; the earth closed over them, and they perished from among the assembly. 34 Then all Israel who were around them fled at their cry, for they said, "Lest the earth swallow us up also!" 35 And a fire came out from the LORD and consumed the two hundred and fifty men who were offering incense. ... 37 "Tell Eleazar, the son of Aaron the priest, to pick up the censers out of the blaze, for they are holy, and scatter the fire some distance away. ... 39 So Eleazar the priest took the bronze censers, which those who were burned up had

presented, and they were hammered out as a covering on the altar, 40 to be a memorial to the children of Israel that no outsider, who is not a descendant of Aaron, should come near to offer incense before the LORD, that he might not become like Korah and his companions, just as the LORD had said to him through Moses.

What was the sin committed by the Korah and his followers and what was their judgment?

God had ordained that Aaron's descendants - the sons of Levi – would be appointed the priestly ministry (Lev. 8,9). The sons of Korah were not happy with this arrangement and so they rebelled against Moses and against God! And because of their rebellion, God judged His redeemed children by separating them from the congregation and the *earth swallowed them up*. Also, in v. 3 they claimed that they were *all holy* and had no need of a priestly ministry. (Can you see the similarities within the church today, where Christians think they are holy and they are not? See Rev. 3: 14-23.)

Can you think of another Old Testament passage showing the separation of God's spiritually redeemed people?

Numbers 13:2, 25, 27-28, 30-33

2 "Send men to spy out the land of Canaan, which I am giving to the children of Israel; from each tribe of their fathers you shall send a man, every one a leader among them." ... 25 And they returned from spying out the land after forty days.

... 27 Then they told him, and said: "We went to the land where you sent us. It truly flows with milk and honey, and this is its fruit. 28 "Nevertheless the people who dwell in the land are strong; the cities are fortified and very large; moreover we saw the descendants of Anak there. ... 30 Then Caleb quieted the people before Moses, and said, "Let us go up at once and take possession, for we are well able to overcome it." 31 But the men who had gone up with him said, "We are not able to go up against the people, for they are stronger than we." 32 And they gave the children of Israel a bad report of the land which they had spied out, saying, "The land through which we have gone as spies is a land that devours its inhabitants, and all the people whom we saw in it are men of great stature. 33 "There we saw the giants (the descendants of Anak came from the giants); and we were like grasshoppers in our own sight, and so we were in their sight."

Numbers 14:2, 27-30

2 And all the children of Israel complained against Moses and Aaron, and the whole congregation said to them, "If only we had died in the land of Egypt! Or if only we had died in this wilderness! ... 27 "How long shall I bear with this evil congregation who complain against Me? I have heard the complaints which the children of Israel make against Me. 28 "Say to them, 'As I live,' says the LORD, 'just as you have spoken in My hearing, so I will do to you: 29 'The carcasses of you who have complained against Me shall fall in this wilderness, all of you who were numbered, according to your entire number, from twenty years old and above. 30 'Except for Caleb the son of Jephunneh and Joshua the son of Nun, you shall by no means enter the land which I swore I would make you dwell in.

And in the types given in these Old Testament passages, we can also see that God will judge and separate His redeemed children in the church that rebel and murmur against God and His Word, as Israel is an example (type) of what we are not to do –

1 Corinthians 10:6, 9-12

6 Now these things became our examples [types], to the intent that we should not lust after evil things as they also lusted. ... 9 nor let us tempt Christ, as some

*of them also tempted, and were destroyed by serpents; 10 nor complain, as some of them also complained, and were destroyed by the destroyer. 11 Now all these things happened to them as examples [types], **and they were written for our admonition, upon whom the ends of the ages have come. 12 Therefore let him who thinks he stands take heed lest he fall.***

Why were the Old Testament types given according to this passage?

Now let's return to the articles with the ark of the covenant –

Numbers 17:1-10

*1 And the LORD spoke to Moses, saying: 2 "Speak to the children of Israel, and get from them a rod from each father's house, all their leaders according to their fathers' houses--twelve rods. Write each man's name on his rod. 3 "And you shall write Aaron's name on the rod of Levi. For there shall be one rod for the head of each father's house. 4 "Then you shall place them in the tabernacle of meeting before the Testimony, where I meet with you. 5 "And it shall be **that the rod of the man whom I choose will blossom; thus I will rid Myself of the complaints of the children of Israel, which they make against you.**" 6 So Moses spoke to the children of Israel, and each of their leaders gave him a rod apiece, for each leader according to their fathers' houses, twelve rods; and the rod of Aaron was among their rods. 7 And Moses placed the rods before the LORD in the tabernacle of witness. 8 Now it came to pass on the next day that Moses went into the tabernacle of witness, and behold, the rod of Aaron, of the house of Levi, had sprouted and put forth buds, had produced blossoms and yielded ripe almonds. 9 Then Moses brought out all the rods from before the LORD to all the children of Israel; and they looked, and each man took his rod. 10 And the LORD said to Moses, "Bring Aaron's rod back before the Testimony, to be kept as a sign against the rebels, that you may put their complaints away from Me, lest they die."*

This passage follows Numbers 16, which describes the rebellion of Korah.

What did God instruct Moses to do in order to *rid God of the complaints of the children of Israel, which they made against God*? And which rod blossomed and *put forth buds* and became the budding rod?

God used Aaron's rod as an answer and response to Israel's complaints against Moses and Aaron (and God). This occurred because of the actions of the unfaithful, complaining, and disobedient Israelites, and it occurred after the rebellion of Korah.

Each of the rods were alike in that they had been severed from the parent tree, but God chose the rod of Aaron and caused it to bud and blossom and yield almonds as a sign of His approval. Aaron's budding rod was to be placed in front of the ark (later within the ark, Heb.9:4) of the covenant **as a sign to those who would rebel and complain against God and His spokesman –**

Bring Aaron's rod back before the Testimony, to be kept as a sign against the rebels, that you may put their complaints away from Me, lest they die."

And judgment will come about for the unrepentant Christian that complains and murmurs against God's law and God's provision. There will be a separation and they will not receive the salvation of the soul which is *life in the age to come*. (Refer also to the parable of the ten virgins in Matt. 25:1-13.)

And perhaps we may also see that the budding rod of Aaron points to the restoration for Israel in that Sabbath Rest out ahead – *Those who come He shall cause to take root in Jacob; Israel shall blossom and bud, And fill the face of the world with fruit* (Isa. 27:6).

Genesis 3:22-24

22 Then the LORD God said, "Behold, the man has become like one of Us, to know good and evil. And now, lest he put out his hand and take also of the tree of life, and eat, and live forever"-- 23 therefore the LORD God sent him out of the garden of Eden to till the ground from which he was taken. 24 So He drove out

the man; and He placed cherubim at the east of the garden of Eden, and a flaming sword which turned every way, to guard the way to the tree of life.

Notice the plural word *Us* used in v. 22. This word points to the Trinity, the three in one Godhead (2 Corinth. 13:14; Luke 3:22).

Why did the Lord God remove Adam and Eve from the *garden of Eden*?

Recall from a previous lesson that God *put the man whom He had formed* in the Garden of Eden (Gen. 2:8). And *the tree of life was also in the midst of the garden* (Gen. 2:9).

Eden means *pleasure*. As mentioned earlier, when Adam was created, he was created in an undying, natural body, designed and created by God to exist forever.

(And man is going to one day be brought back into that state.)

So, Adam and the Woman were created eternal beings and did not therefore need to eat from the tree of life for physical life.

In Gen. 1:26 we read that God created man to have dominion (rule) over His restored creation.

The Man and the Woman were created to rule over the newly restored earth in the place of its present ruler, Satan. And in order to rule, the Man and the Woman were provided with sustenance. And such sustenance would have gone beyond the need for physical food to that which would also equip them for rulership.

The tree of life is first seen in the Garden of Eden in connection with the purpose for Man's creation, rulership. And we see it mentioned in Chapter 2 of Revelation as one of the overcomer's promises given to those who will fulfill God's purpose for Man and will rule with Christ in the Kingdom Age.

Revelation 2:7

7 "He who has an ear, let him hear what the Spirit says to the churches. To him who overcomes I will give to eat from the tree of life, which is in the midst of the Paradise of God." '

The Tree of life was present when man was in a position to rule over the earth and the Tree of Life is mentioned again, in the Millennial Reign, when the fully redeemed will rule with Christ!

After the fall, Adam and Eve were no longer in a position to rule. And so they would not be allowed to eat of the tree of life and they would be removed from the Garden of Eden.

We also learned that the tree of life is located in the *paradise of God* – literally the garden of God, pleasure ground.

Genesis 1:11

11 Then God said, "Let the earth bring forth grass, the herb that yields seed, and the fruit tree that yields fruit according to its kind, whose seed is in itself, on the earth"; and it was so.

In this passage, we see that the tree of life could only bring forth fruit *according to its kind*. And the fruit of this tree in Eden was for the purpose of equipping those created in the image and likeness of God for rulership. So, the tree of life in the garden of God (Rev. 2:7) can only produce fruit for this same purpose.

And as Adam and the Woman were barred from this tree once they were no longer in the image and likeness of God, so it has been kept from human beings ever since, awaiting the time when the overcomers will once again be in the image and likeness of God, having a redeemed spirit, a redeemed soul and a redeemed body covered in glory; then being in a position to eat its fruit with rulership in view.

This tree of life is what will give the overcomer wisdom in Christ's Kingdom regarding their rulership/administration as His joint heir.

Proverbs 3:13, 18, 35

13 Happy is the man who finds wisdom, And the man who gains understanding; ... 18 She is a tree of life to those who take hold of her, And happy are all who retain her. ... 35 The wise shall inherit glory, But shame shall be the legacy of fools.

Revelation 22:14

14 Blessed are those who do His commandments, that they may have the right to the tree of life, and may enter through the gates into the city.

Remember that the *LORD God took the man and put him in the garden of Eden to tend [work or serve] and keep it* (Gen. 2:15). The word *keep* means to *guard, preserve, protect as a watchman*. Adam was placed in a position to guard and protect the restored earth and rule over God's creation.

Eden means *pleasure* and *garden* is the same word referred to as *paradise* in **Luke 23:42-43** –

*42 Then he said to Jesus, "Lord, remember me when You come into Your kingdom." 43 And Jesus said to him, "Assuredly, I say to you, today you will be with Me in **paradise [garden]**."*

The Man and the Woman were created to rule over (guard, protect) the newly restored earth in the place of its present ruler, Satan.

And throughout Scripture, we can see that the Garden of Eden refers to a place of rulership.

In Gen. 3: 22, the word *forever* in the phrase *lest he put out his hand and take also of the tree of life, and eat, and live forever*, is the Hebrew word *olam*. It can refer to a long period of time, perpetual time, antiquity or future time. An interesting fact is that **neither the Hebrew text of the Old Testament nor the Greek text of the New Testament has a word for *eternal***.

Olam in the Hebrew text of the Old Testament is the main word translated *eternal* or *forever*. This word has to do with a long period of time (not with eternity), which would be time related to the subject at hand.

And though the word is used of God numerous times, it would still relate, first and foremost, to time in the foundational structure (the seven-day pattern). God is timeless but Scripture deals with events during time, not during eternity.

Aion and *aionios* in the Greek text of the New Testament are Greek words used for eternity. They are associated with time the same way that *olam* is associated with time in the Hebrew text of the Old Testament- age lasting or period of time. (Refer to the article in the appendix entitled *Olam* for further discussion.)

In Gen. 3:23, we read the *LORD God sent him out of the garden of Eden to till the ground from which he was taken. 24 So He drove out [cast out; expelled] the man; and He placed cherubim at the east of the garden of Eden, and a flaming sword which turned every way, to guard the way to the tree of life.*

Life under the curse was characterized by laboring away from the immediate presence of God.

What did God place in the garden of Eden *to guard the way to the tree of life?*

What overshadowed the mercy seat according to Heb. 9:5?

Hebrews 9:5 says “*and above it were the cherubim of glory overshadowing the mercy seat...*”

Recall that the word *overshadowed* comes from a root word which means *shadow of death*. And if the blood was not applied over the mercy seat, the sins of Israel would not be atoned for, and the people would be cut off and not receive the inheritance out ahead.

Numbers 7:89

89 Now when Moses went into the tabernacle of meeting to speak with Him, he heard the voice of One speaking to him from above the mercy seat that was on the ark of the Testimony, from between the two cherubim; thus He spoke to him.

Exodus 25:20-22

20 "And the cherubim shall stretch out their wings above, covering the mercy seat with their wings, and they shall face one another; the faces of the cherubim shall be toward the mercy seat. 21 "You shall put the mercy seat on top of the ark, and in the ark you shall put the Testimony that I will give you. 22 "And there I will meet with you, and I will speak with you from above the mercy seat, from between the two cherubim which are on the ark of the Testimony, about everything which I will give you in commandment to the children of Israel.

God required that the blood of a substitute sacrifice be applied over the mercy seat which was **flanked by the cherubim**, to atone for the sins of the people and thereby assure the communion between God and His people. And **the blood also made atonement for the Holy Place (Leviticus 16:15)**.

(Angels are portrayed often as fearsome warriors who guard the holy presence of God from invasion of uncleanness. This angelic presence is removed in the consummation when God's people will have free access to God -Rev. 2:7; 22:2).

Psalm 99:1

1 The LORD reigns; Let the peoples tremble! He dwells between the cherubim; Let the earth be moved!

Isaiah 37:16

16 "O LORD of hosts, God of Israel, **the One who dwells between the cherubim**, You are God, You alone, of all the kingdoms of the earth. You have made heaven and earth.

We can see the representation of the cherubim guarding the access to God in the first covering of the Old Testament tabernacle –

Exodus 26:1

1 "Moreover you shall make the tabernacle with ten curtains of fine woven linen, and blue, purple, and scarlet thread; with **artistic designs of cherubim** you shall weave them.

The Tabernacle structure was overlaid with 4 coverings as explained in detail in Exodus 26 and 36. The Tabernacle was covered by a large white linen cloth composed of ten curtains interwoven with **figures of cherubim**, in blue, purple, and scarlet (Exo. 26:1; 36:8-13).

Can you think of another article within the tabernacle that had cherubim woven into it?

Within the temple of God, the veil guarded the access into the Holy of Holies and it was *woven with an artistic design of cherubim* –

Exodus 26:31, 33

31 "You shall make a veil woven of blue, purple, and scarlet thread, and fine woven linen. It shall be woven with an **artistic design of cherubim**. ... 33 "And you shall hang the veil from the clasps. Then you shall bring the ark of the Testimony in there, behind the veil. The veil shall be a divider for you between the holy place and the Most Holy.

And we can see the protective role of the cherubim with the departure of the glory of the Lord, from the temple of God, in Ezekiel 10. Recall that God's glory was in the temple after the Lord established a theocracy with the nation of Israel. (The theocracy lasted over 800 years, from 1446 B.C. until 605 B.C., when the Times of the Gentiles began.)

Due to Israel's years of disobedience and unfaithfulness, the glory of the Lord departed from the temple –

Ezekiel 10:4, 18-19; 11:22-23

4 Then the glory of the LORD went up from the cherub, and paused over the threshold of the temple; and the house was filled with the cloud, and the court was full of the brightness of the LORD's glory. ... 18 Then the glory of the LORD departed from the threshold of the temple and stood over the cherubim. 19 And the cherubim lifted their wings and mounted up from the earth in my sight. When they went out, the wheels were beside them; and they stood at the door of the east gate of the LORD's house, and the glory of the God of Israel was above them.

*...22 So the cherubim lifted up their wings, with the wheels beside them, and the glory of the God of Israel was high above them. 23 **And the glory of the LORD went up from the midst of the city and stood on the mountain, which is on the east side of the city [Mt. of Olives].***

In these passages we see that the glory of the Lord departed in stages. First it went up from the cherubim over the ark to the threshold of the temple (Ezek. 10:4). Then we read that it stood over the cherubim in Ezek. 10:18 as they went to the east gate of the temple (Ezek. 10:19) and then to the Mount of Olives (Ezek. 11:23). And the glory will not return until the Millennial temple is prepared –

Ezekiel 43:1-5

*1 Afterward he brought me to the gate, the gate that faces toward the east. 2 And behold, **the glory of the God of Israel came from the way of the east.** His voice was like the sound of many waters; and the earth shone with His glory. 3 It was like the appearance of the vision which I saw--like the vision which I saw*

when I came to destroy the city. The visions were like the vision which I saw by the River Chebar; and I fell on my face. 4 And the glory of the LORD came into the temple by way of the gate which faces toward the east. 5 The Spirit lifted me up and brought me into the inner court; and behold, the glory of the LORD filled the temple.

(Please feel free to review the timeline produced by Ann Herbert, in the appendix.)

Now there are some similarities between the Ezekiel passages and the Lord's first advent (although the Ezekiel passage applies to Israel alone). First, let's read about the Lord's glory –

John 1:1, 14

*1 In the beginning was the Word, and the Word was with God, and the Word was God. ... 14 And the Word became flesh and dwelt among us, **and we beheld His glory, the glory as of the only begotten of the Father, full of grace and truth.***

What did they behold according to this v.?

Just as the glory of God rested above the mercy seat in the tabernacle, pointing to God's communion with the people, so Jesus, the incarnate Word of God became flesh, **and we beheld His glory**, and He communed with the House of Israel, with the message "*repent, the Kingdom of God is at hand.*" Also, the Apostle of John witnessed Christ's glory during the transfiguration (Matt. 17:1-5).

Acts 1:9-12

9 Now when He had spoken these things, while they watched, He was taken up, and a cloud received Him out of their sight. 10 And while they looked steadfastly toward heaven as He went up, behold, two men stood by them in white apparel,

*11 who also said, "Men of Galilee, why do you stand gazing up into heaven? This same Jesus, who was taken up from you into heaven, will so come in like manner as you saw Him go into heaven." 12 Then they returned to Jerusalem **from the mount called Olivet**, which is near Jerusalem, a Sabbath day's journey.*

Where did Jesus' ascension occur according to v. 12 and what does v.11 say regarding His return?

Just as the glory of the Lord left from the east so it was with our Lord's ascension –

*the glory of the LORD went up from the midst of the city and stood on the mountain, which is on the east side of the city [Mt. of Olives]. **Ezek. 11:23***

Jesus ascended to the Father at the *east side of the city, from the mount called Olivet* (the Mount of Olives). And on the Mt. of Olives, the Lord tells of His return –

Matthew 24:3, 29-30

*3 Now as **He sat on the Mount of Olives**, the disciples came to Him privately, saying, "Tell us, when will these things be? And what will be the sign of Your coming, and of the end of the age?" ... 29 "Immediately after the tribulation of those days the sun will be darkened, and the moon will not give its light; the stars will fall from heaven, and the powers of the heavens will be shaken. 30 "Then the sign of the Son of Man will appear in heaven, and then all the tribes of the earth will mourn, **and they will see the Son of Man coming on the clouds of heaven with power and great glory.***

Zechariah 14:4 gives us the future hope and assurance that Jesus will one day return not only in the same way, but to the very same location!

In a prophecy related to the end times, Zechariah the prophet declares –

And in that day His feet will stand on the Mount of Olives, Which faces Jerusalem on the east. And the Mount of Olives shall be split in two, From east to west, Making a very large valley; Half of the mountain shall move toward the north And half of it toward the south (Zechariah 14:4).

(On the night Jesus was betrayed, the evening began with the Last Supper in Jerusalem and ended in the garden of Gethsemane, on the Mount of Olives. During that last Passover meal, Jesus washed His disciples' feet and then revealed Judas as the betrayer. Then He took His disciples to the Garden of Gethsemane, which means "Garden of the Oil-press," located on the western slope of the Mount of Olives. There Jesus prayed in agony and ***His sweat became like drops of blood falling down to the ground [the cursed ground].***)

Just as *the glory of the LORD filled the temple*, so the Lord came to the earth *and we beheld His glory, the glory as of the only begotten of the Father*. And just as the glory of the Lord departed from the temple *and went up from the midst of the city and stood on the mountain, which is on the east side of the city [Mt. of Olives]*, so the Lord Jesus ascended above the Mt. of Olives. And lastly, just as *the glory of the God of Israel will come from the way of the east; and the glory of the LORD will again fill the temple*, so we see that according to the prophet Zechariah, *in that day His feet [the feet of Jesus] will stand on the Mount of Olives and the earth will shine with His glory*, oh glorious Day!

Of note, the two men described in Acts 1:10 are not angels but men. The Greek word for angels is *angelos* while the Greek word for *men*, used in this v. is *anēr*. For this reason, many believe that the two men in the Acts 1 passage refers to the two witnesses in Rev. 11:3 and that the two witnesses, the two men in *white apparel*, are probably Elijah and Moses, who also appeared with the Lord in the transfiguration (Mat. 17:2-5).

In addition to the cherubim, what else guarded the *way to the tree of life* in Gen. 3:23 and can you recall what this points to in Scripture?

*A flaming sword which turned every way, guarded the way to the tree of life. The adjective *flaming* or *flame* depicts judgment in Scripture. The Word of God is often referred to as the Sword –*

Ephesians 6:17

17 And take the helmet of salvation, and the sword of the Spirit, which is the word of God;

Hebrew 4:12

12 For the word of God is living and powerful, and sharper than any two-edged sword, piercing even to the division of soul and spirit, and of joints and marrow, and is a discerner of the thoughts and intents of the heart.

Revelation 1:16

16 He had in His right hand seven stars, out of His mouth went a sharp two-edged sword, and His countenance was like the sun shining in its strength.

It is the sword of the Spirit, the Word of God (and the incarnate Word of God), that will guard the access into paradise when Christ returns. And it is in paradise where the overcomer will also have access to the tree of life as described in Rev. 2:7 –

"He who has an ear, let him hear what the Spirit says to the churches. To him who overcomes I will give to eat from the tree of life, which is in the midst of the Paradise of God [garden of Eden, garden of bliss]."

Now let's begin our study of Gen. 4.

Genesis 4:1-5

1 Now Adam knew Eve his wife, and she conceived and bore Cain, and said, "I have acquired a man from the LORD." 2 Then she bore again, this time his

brother Abel. Now Abel was a keeper of sheep, but Cain was a tiller of the ground. 3 And in the process of time it came to pass that Cain brought an offering of the fruit of the ground to the LORD. 4 Abel also brought of the firstborn of his flock and of their fat. And the LORD respected Abel and his offering, 5 but He did not respect Cain and his offering. And Cain was very angry, and his countenance fell.

In v.1, the word *knew* is the Hebrew word *yāda'* and it indicates the most intimate relationship between the man and the woman, the sexual bond. Cain means *possession or acquired*. Abel means *breath* and comes from the root word for *vapor*. Perhaps this points to the brevity of Abel's life.

How are they both described in v.2?

Abel was a keeper [feeder; shepherd] of sheep while Cain was a tiller [server or worker] of the ground. Cain worked or served the ground perhaps pointing to someone setting their mind on earthly things.

Who else was a keeper of the sheep in Scripture?

In this chapter, we will see that Abel is a type of Christ while Cain is a type of Israel, the Jewish brethren that killed their brother.

What were the offerings each brought, and which one was respected (regarded) by the Lord and why was this offering respected by the Lord?

That God accepted Abel's sacrifice and rejected Cain's was not based on the fact that Cain's sacrifice was bloodless. Rather, God's acceptance or rejection

was based on the hearts of the two men and their faith regarding their sacrifice.

Hebrews 11:4

*4 **By faith** Abel offered to God a more excellent sacrifice than Cain, through which he obtained witness that he was righteous, God testifying of his gifts; and through it he being dead still speaks.*

Genesis 4:5-8

5 but He did not respect Cain and his offering. And Cain was very angry, and his countenance fell. 6 So the LORD said to Cain, "Why are you angry? And why has your countenance fallen? 7 "If you do well, will you not be accepted? And if you do not do well, sin lies at the door. And its desire is for you, but you should rule over it." 8 Now Cain talked with Abel his brother; and it came to pass, when they were in the field, that Cain rose up against Abel his brother and killed him.

Cain became very angry, and his countenance fell. What did the Lord tell Cain in v.7?

The Lord tells Cain that if he does well, he *will be accepted* which means *exalted, lifted up, elevated*. If he does not do well, *sin lies at the door*, but the Lord tells Cain *you should rule over it*.

The phrase *you should rule over it* is actually prophetic in nature as it says "*but you shall rule over sin*" one day (in the Seventh Day Sabbath Rest out ahead). At the end of the tribulation, after Israel's national repentance, they will be brought into the land and they will rule under King David who will rule under King Jesus!

Remember, Cain is a type of Israel while Abel is a type of Christ. Israel is God's firstborn and God chose Israel to rule over the gentile nations in a theocracy under God. If they obeyed, there were great blessings for Israel but If they disobeyed, there were great cursings –

Deuteronomy 28:1

*1 "Now it shall come to pass, **if you diligently obey** the voice of the LORD your God, to observe carefully all His commandments which I command you today, that the LORD your **God will set you high above all nations of the earth.***

Leviticus 26:14, 17-18, 33

*14 'But if you do not obey Me, and do not observe all these commandments, ... 17 I will set My face against you, and you shall be defeated by your enemies. **Those who hate you shall reign over you, and you shall flee when no one pursues you.** 18 'And after all this, if you do not obey Me, then I will punish you seven times more for your sins. ... 33 I will scatter you among the nations and draw out a sword after you; **your land shall be desolate and your cities waste.***

(And regarding the church, we will see great blessings and the reward of ruling in the age to come, **if** we obey His Word in faith, and rule over sin by crucifying our old sin nature. If we follow the man of the spirit and put to death the man of our flesh, we will have victory. But if we disobey God's Word, *sin lies at our door* and we will suffer loss in Christ's Millennial Kingdom.)

1Corinthians 3:11-12, 14-15

11 For no other foundation can anyone lay than that which is laid, which is Jesus Christ. 12 Now if anyone builds on this foundation with gold, silver, precious stones, wood, hay, straw, ... 14 If anyone's work which he has built on it endures, he will receive a reward. 15 If anyone's work is burned, he will suffer loss; but he himself will be saved, yet so as through fire.)

Jeremiah 17:9-10

9 "The heart is deceitful above all things, And desperately wicked; Who can know it? 10 I, the LORD, search the heart, I test the mind, Even to give every man according to his ways, According to the fruit of his doings.

Did Israel obey and if not, what was the result of their disobedience before the cross, during the cross and after the cross?

Before the cross we see the removal of the glory of God in the tabernacle and Israel's captivity under gentile nations, thus beginning the Times of the Gentiles. During the cross, Israel remained under the persecution of the Roman gentile nation. Eventually, the Romans destroyed Jerusalem in A.D. 70 and sacked the temple. After the destruction of Jerusalem, the diaspora occurred and the Jews were scattered among the gentile nations, enduring much persecution throughout the centuries (eg. Spanish Inquisition, fascism of Hitler and Stalin, etc.).

So then, Cain was *a tiller of the ground* therefore a man of the earth, a worldly man, picturing our *old man, our sin nature*; whereas Abel was a *keeper of sheep*, a shepherd and he was righteous, as was the Good Shepherd, Jesus Christ –

John 10:11

11 "I am the good shepherd. The good shepherd gives His life for the sheep. Abel therefore picturing the man of the spirit.

According to Gen. 4, where did Cain kill able?

Matthew 13:38

38 "The field is the world, the good seeds are the sons of the kingdom, but the tares are the sons of the wicked one.

1John 3:11-12

11 For this is the message that you heard from the beginning, that we should love one another, 12 not as Cain who was of the wicked one and murdered his brother. And why did he murder him? Because his works were evil and his brother's righteous.

As mentioned earlier Cain is a type of Israel that slew the Jewish brother, Jesus. In the type, Cain kills Abel when they are in the field together and in the antitype, Israel kills the Christ when they are in the land together. Through the death of Abel at the hands of Cain, we can see that the seed of the serpent (who is the ruler of this age), sought to stop *the Seed of the Woman* from fulfilling that which God had said in Gen. 3:15!

We will discuss this further in our next lesson. Keep up the good work ladies.

The Book of Genesis Part 2

Lesson Twelve – Cain as a type of Israel

Objective of Lesson Twelve: Cain as a type of Israel

In our previous lesson, we saw that Cain is a type of Israel that slew the Jewish brother, Jesus. And we learned that Abel's sacrifice was accepted while Cain's sacrifice was not. Cain's envy toward his brother was a picture of the nation of Israel, whose attempts to keep the Law were never acceptable to the Lord, and they too were jealous of their brother, Jesus.

Cain was a tiller of the ground, a man of the earth, whereas Abel was a keeper of the sheep. And Jesus is our Good Shepherd. Abel, whose sacrifice of lambs from the flock was acceptable to God, pictures the Lord Jesus, who would Himself be the accepted sacrifice as the Lamb of God.

In contrast, Cain, whose sacrifice was not accepted, pictures Israel, whose attempts to keep the letter of the law were never acceptable to the Lord and they were jealous of their brother.

When Cain and Abel were in the field together, Cain rose up and killed his brother Abel and when the nation of Israel and the Lord were in the land of Israel together, so Israel rose up and killed his brother, the Lord Jesus.

Through the death of Abel at the hands of Cain, we can see that the seed of the serpent (who is the ruler of this age), sought to stop *the Seed of the Woman* from fulfilling that which God had said in Gen. 3:15!

We examined the spiritual significance of the articles within the Tabernacle for Israel – Aaron's budding Rod and the cherubim guarding the access to God. And we learned in Ezekiel that the cherubim also carried the glory of God away from the temple after the theocracy for Israel ended. We related this to

the cherubim guarding the access to the Garden of Eden and the Tree of Life, after Adam and Eve fell and were driven out from the Garden. And the flaming sword seen in Gen. 3:24 represented the Word of God (Eph. 6:17; Heb. 4:12).

Let's examine Israel, typified by Cain, during the Lord's first advent.

Matthew 23:27, 34-36

27 "Woe to you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! For you are like whitewashed tombs which indeed appear beautiful outwardly, but inside are full of dead men's bones and all uncleanness. ... 34 "Therefore, indeed, I send you prophets, wise men, and scribes: some of them you will kill and crucify, and some of them you will scourge in your synagogues and persecute from city to city, 35 "that on you may come all the righteous blood shed on the earth, from the blood of righteous Abel to the blood of Zechariah, son of Berechiah, whom you murdered between the temple and the altar. 36 "Assuredly, I say to you, all these things will come upon this generation.

What is the Pharisee's punishment according to v.35?

The Lord said *that on you may come **all the righteous blood shed on the earth**, from the blood of righteous Abel to the blood of Zechariah, son of Berechiah.*

Wow, **all the righteous blood from Abel to Zechariah** is a large amount of blood! Zechariah, mentioned in v.35, was the son of the of high priest Berechiah (Jehoiada). After the high priest Berechiah (Jehoiada) died, the Israelite priests served idols. God sent Zechariah, son of high priest Berechiah, to warn them and they stoned him to death.

2 Chronicles 24:18-22

18 Therefore they left the house of the LORD God of their fathers, and served wooden images and idols; and wrath came upon Judah and Jerusalem because of their trespass. 19 Yet He sent prophets to them, to bring them back to the LORD; and they testified against them, but they would not listen. 20 Then the Spirit of God came upon Zechariah the son of Jehoiada the priest, who stood above the people, and said to them, "Thus says God: 'Why do you transgress the commandments of the LORD, so that you cannot prosper? Because you have forsaken the LORD, He also has forsaken you.' " 21 So they conspired against him, and at the command of the king they stoned him with stones in the court of the house of the LORD. 22 Thus Joash the king did not remember the kindness which Jehoiada his father had done to him, but killed his son; and as he died, he said, "The LORD look on it, and repay!"

When Jesus spoke of the parable of the vineyard to the religious leaders, they seemed to comprehend that the Lord was speaking about them –

Matthew 21:33-41, 43, 45

*33 "Hear another parable: There was a certain landowner who planted a vineyard and set a hedge around it, dug a winepress in it and built a tower. And he leased it to vinedressers and went into a far country. 34 "Now when vintage-time drew near, he sent his servants to the vinedressers, that they might receive its fruit. 35 "And the vinedressers took his servants, beat one, killed one, and stoned another. 36 "Again he sent other servants, more than the first, and they did likewise to them. 37 "Then last of all he sent his son to them, saying, 'They will respect my son.' 38 "But when the vinedressers saw the son, they said among themselves, 'This is the heir. Come, let us kill him and seize his inheritance.' 39 "So they took him and cast him out of the vineyard and killed him. 40 "Therefore, when the owner of the vineyard comes, what will he do to those vinedressers?" 41 They said to Him, "He will destroy those wicked men miserably, and lease his vineyard to other vinedressers who will render to him the fruits in their seasons." ... 43 "Therefore I say to you, the kingdom of God will be taken from you and given to a nation bearing the fruits of it. ... 45 **Now when the chief priests and***

Pharisees heard His parables, they perceived that He was speaking of them.

And yet, when standing before Pilate, they still yelled crucify Him, crucify Him, ***His blood be on us and on our children –***

Matthew 27:22-25

*22 Pilate said to them, "What then shall I do with Jesus who is called Christ?" They all said to him, "Let Him be crucified!" 23 Then the governor said, "Why, what evil has He done?" But they cried out all the more, saying, "Let Him be crucified!" 24 When Pilate saw that he could not prevail at all, but rather that a tumult was rising, he took water and washed his hands before the multitude, saying, "I am innocent of the blood of this just Person. You see to it." 25 And all the people answered and said, "**His blood be on us and on our children.**"*

And it is sad but true that blood has been on the people of Israel and their children since the cross, beginning with the destruction of Jerusalem by the Romans in A.D. 70, the diaspora, and the persecution and antisemitism continuing throughout the centuries.

The bloodshed and death of the Jewish people will climax during the tribulation period, under the antichrist and then the Lord will intervene and restore His people after they *recognize Him who they pierced* (Zech. 12:10) and repent.

So then, Abel whose sacrifice of lambs from his flock was acceptable to God, pictures the Lord Jesus Christ who would Himself be the accepted sacrifice as the Lamb of God.

In contrast we have Abel's brother, Cain, whose sacrifice was not accepted, who was envious of his brother which is a picture of the nation of Israel, whose attempts to keep the Law were never acceptable to the Lord and they were jealous of their brother.

When Cain and Abel were in the field together, Cain rose up and killed his brother Abel and when the nation of Israel and the Lord were in the land of Israel together, so Israel rose up and killed his brother, the Lord Jesus.

Here we see a Man, Jesus Christ, who willingly took on the sin of others with a view to redemption, for the purpose of rulership, who paid the price for that sin through His own death and shed blood.

Abel, whose sacrifice was accepted by God with Abel himself being killed by his brother Cain, is a type for the Lord's death as the Lamb of God, the accepted sacrifice, by the hand of His brother, Israel.

And the blood of Jesus, the Passover Lamb slain by the Jewish brethren (as they were the only ones that could kill the Passover lamb), *speaks better things* than the blood of Abel.

Hebrews 12:23-24

23 to the general assembly and church of the firstborn who are registered in heaven, to God the Judge of all, to the spirits of just men made perfect, 24 to Jesus the Mediator of the new covenant, and to the blood of sprinkling that speaks better things than that of Abel.

Recall that in Luke 22:44 we read of Jesus' *drops of blood* falling on the ground in the Garden of Gethsemane. Jesus prayed in agony and His *sweat became like drops of blood falling to the ground*, the cursed ground.

Here is another principle seen with Cain and Abel – the first son is replaced by the second son. Cain, the firstborn, was replaced by the second (Able replaced by Seth). Can you think of any other examples where the first is replaced by the second?

Ishmael was replaced by Isaac –

Genesis 16:15

15 So Hagar bore Abram a son; and Abram named his son, whom Hagar bore, Ishmael.

Genesis 17:19

19 Then God said: "No, Sarah your wife shall bear you a son, and you shall call his name Isaac; I will establish My covenant with him for an everlasting covenant, and with his descendants after him.

Esau was replaced by Jacob –

Romans 9:13

13 As it is written, "Jacob I have loved, but Esau I have hated."

Hebrews 12:16

16 lest there be any fornicator or profane person like Esau, who for one morsel of food sold his birthright.

Regarding rulership in the heavenly portion of Christ's Millennial Kingdom, Israel was replaced by a *new creation*, the Church, *that would bear the fruits thereof* –

Matthew 21:43

43 "Therefore I say to you, the kingdom of God will be taken from you and given to a nation bearing the fruits of it.

And for the Christian, our first birth (born spiritually dead in our trespasses and sin) is replaced by our second birth once we put faith in Christ and become a *new creation* in Christ –

2Corinthians 5:17

17 Therefore, if anyone is in Christ, he is a new creation; old things have passed away; behold, all things have become new.

At the end of Gen. 4, we will see that after Cain kills Abel, another son is sent to replace the first son, Cain. And it is through the bloodline of this second son that the Messiah would come. Abel forms the foundational type for the Jewish people, the first son, killing the second Son, the Lord Jesus. (And in a future lesson, we will see that just as Abel pictures Christ in Death, so Seth pictures Christ in resurrection) –

Genesis 4:25

25 And Adam knew his wife again, and she bore a son and named him Seth, "For God has appointed another seed for me instead of Abel, whom Cain killed."

Genesis 4:9-12

9 Then the LORD said to Cain, "Where is Abel your brother?" He said, "I do not know. Am I my brother's keeper?" 10 And He said, "What have you done? The voice of your brother's blood cries out to Me from the ground. 11 "So now you are cursed from the earth, which has opened its mouth to receive your brother's blood from your hand. 12 "When you till the ground, it shall no longer yield its strength to you. A fugitive and a vagabond you shall be on the earth."

What was Cain's response to God's question in v.9?

Cain lied to God. He knew what happened to his brother as he was the one who murdered him. Then Cain disrespectfully asks God, *Am I my brother's keeper* [guardian, watchman]?

Hebrews 12:24

to Jesus the Mediator of the new covenant, and to the blood of sprinkling that speaks better things than that of Abel.

The blood of Abel *cries out* to God *from the ground*, a ground that is cursed and unredeemed after the fall. And the blood of Christ *that speaks better things than that of Abel*, provides redemption, not only for fallen Man but also for the unredeemed earth from which the blood of Abel cried.

When the Lord returns, redemption of man and the cursed earth will be fulfilled. It is Christ's blood that will restore and heal **all things**.

What was Cain's punishment according to vv.11,12?

Cain was *cursed from the earth* and God also said that when Cain tilled the ground, it would *no longer yield its strength* for Cain. When Cain tilled or worked the ground, it would bear no fruit. And here again we can see that like Cain, Israel would be spiritually fruitless after they killed their brother. Recall the parable of the vineyard –

Matthew 21:33, 38-39, 43

*33 "Hear another parable: There was a certain landowner who planted a vineyard and set a hedge around it, dug a winepress in it and built a tower. And he leased it to vinedressers and went into a far country. ... 38 "But when the vinedressers saw the son, they said among themselves, 'This is the heir. Come, let us kill him and seize his inheritance.' 39 "So they took him and cast him out of the vineyard and killed him. ... 43 "Therefore I say to you, **the kingdom of God will be taken from you and given to a nation bearing the fruits of it.***

The word *till* also means to serve and after Cain killed Abel, the ground (the land) would no longer *yield its strength*. Recall that Israel was called out to be

God's firstborn, His chosen people to declare the name of the One True God and His Word –

Exodus 9:16

16 "But indeed for this purpose I have raised you up, that I may show My power [strength] in you, and that My name may be declared in all the earth.

Isaiah 43:10

10 "You are My witnesses," says the LORD, "And My servant whom I have chosen, That you may know and believe Me, And understand that I am He. Before Me there was no God formed, Nor shall there be after Me.

Israel, typified by Cain, lost its power, and strength after they killed their King and rejected the offer of ruling in the heavenly portion of the Messianic Kingdom. And the offer of the heavenly Kingdom would go to a new creation in Christ that would *bear the fruits thereof*.

Yet God is merciful, and after Israel's national repentance at the end of the tribulation, they will be placed as the head of the nations, in the earthly portion of the Messiah's Kingdom –

Deuteronomy 28:13

*13 "And **the LORD will make you the head and not the tail**; you shall be above only, and not be beneath, if you heed the commandments of the LORD your God, which I command you today, and are careful to observe them.*

Ezekiel 36:27-28

27 "I will put My Spirit within you and cause you to walk in My statutes, and you will keep My judgments and do them. 28 "Then you shall dwell in the land that I gave to your fathers; you shall be My people, and I will be your God.

Just as with Cain, Israel, throughout their history, has acted apart from faith. And acting apart from faith could never produce fruit, only *leaves*, as

demonstrated by Adam and Eve, covering themselves with fig leaves, which was also a fruitless act apart from faith.

As with Cain, the Lord provided an opportunity for national Israel *to do well* at the Lord's first Advent. Their Messiah came with a message of repentance - *repent for the Kingdom of the heavens is at hand*. And if they received this message, *they would have done well and they would have been accepted*.

Even after the cross, Israel was given another opportunity to *do well* through the re-offer of the Kingdom of the Heavens, given by God's messengers, in the Book of Acts. And again, Israel rejected this re-offer and persecuted the messengers (Acts 7).

Luke 13:6-9

6 He also spoke this parable: "A certain man had a fig tree [Israel] planted in his vineyard, and he came seeking fruit on it and found none. 7 "Then he said to the keeper of his vineyard, 'Look, for three years I have come seeking fruit on this fig tree and find none. Cut it down; why does it use up the ground?' 8 "But he answered and said to him, 'Sir, let it alone this year also, until I dig around it and fertilize it. 9 'And if it bears fruit, well. But if not, after that you can cut it down.' "

What period do you think vv.6,7 refers to in the parable of the fig tree?

Verses 6 and 7 refer to the offer of the Kingdom of the heavens at the Lord's first Advent.

What period is v. 8 referring to?

Verse 8 is referring to the re-offer of the Kingdom of the heavens to national Israel, as seen in the Book of Acts.

Verse 9 refers to the outcome for rejecting the offer and re-offers of the Kingdom of the heavens.

Acts 28:28

28 "Therefore let it be known to you that the salvation of God has been sent to the Gentiles, and they will hear it!"

What other punishment against Cain is mentioned in Gen. 4:12?

Cain would also be a *fugitive and a vagabond on the earth*. *Fugitive* comes from a word that means to *vacillate, quiver, totter, shake, stagger, wander*.

Vagabond comes from a primitive root word that means *to wander, to be agitated, moved*.

And regarding Israel as the antitype of Cain, due to their years of disobedience, they were *scattered among the nations, and they were dispersed throughout the countries*, staggering and wandering on the earth.

This occurred in 605 B.C. when the Times of the Gentiles began (refer to the Times of the Gentiles Timeline at the end of this lesson and in the appendix), and Israel was taken captive by the Babylonians.

Ezekiel 36:16-19

*16 Moreover the word of the LORD came to me, saying: 17 "Son of man, when the house of Israel dwelt in their own land, they defiled it by their own ways and deeds... 18 "Therefore I poured out My fury on them for the blood they had shed on the land, and for their idols with which they had defiled it. 19 "So **I scattered them among the nations, and they were dispersed throughout the countries**; I judged them according to their ways and their deeds.*

And after the cross, Israel was dispersed from the land (which was under gentile rulership). In A.D. 70, Jerusalem was destroyed by the Roman Empire and the Jewish people continued to be scattered among the gentile nations of the world. Israel, just like Cain, would live in foreign lands in a state of restlessness, in constant fear of being killed.

Jeremiah 30:11

For I am with you,' says the LORD, "to save you; Though I make a full end of all nations where I have scattered you, Yet I will not make a complete end of you. But I will correct you in justice, And will not let you go altogether unpunished.'

2Chronicles 7:14

if My people who are called by My name will humble themselves, and pray and seek My face, and turn from their wicked ways, then I will hear from heaven, and will forgive their sin and heal their land.

According to these passages, why did God drive His people out among the nations?

God drove them out among the nations **to effect repentance through persecution at the hands of the nations**, and He would not restore them to their land until His purpose for removing them had been realized.

Since God drove His people out among the nations to effect repentance, why has God allowed remnants to return to the land prior to repentance?

There had to be a remnant in the land in connection with Christ's first coming, and there has to be a remnant in the land in connection with Christ's

second coming.

But, just as the remnant in the land at Christ's first coming was driven back out among the nations (in A.D. 70), so will it be with the remnant in the land in connection with Christ's second coming.

The remnant presently in the land is going to one day be uprooted and driven back out among the nations.

And during the middle of the coming Tribulation, when the man of sin, the Beast, the Antichrist, breaks his covenant with Israel and seeks to destroy the nation from off the face of the earth (Matt. 24:15ff; Luke 21:20ff), the nation of Israel will cease to exist as a recognized nation among nations. And God will then deal with all of the Jewish people out in Antichrist's kingdom relative to repentance.

Genesis 4:14-15

14 And the LORD said to him, "Therefore, whoever kills Cain, vengeance shall be taken on him sevenfold." And the LORD set a mark on Cain, lest anyone finding him should kill him.

15 Then Cain went out from the presence of the LORD and dwelt in the land of Nod on the east of Eden.

What did God tell Cain in v. 14 and what did the Lord set upon Cain?

The LORD set a mark on Cain, lest anyone finding him should kill him.

The word *mark* means *sign* and God placed a *sign or mark* of protection on Cain. And the mark also signified a mark or sign of ownership. Israel is God's firstborn and will not be annihilated. All of God's promises would come to fruition through the seed of Abraham.

And just as Cain is promised protection so has the nation of Israel. The gentile nations that have tried (and will try in a time yet future) to annihilate the

Jewish people, will receive *sevenfold vengeance*, **complete** vengeance by God (seven being the number of completeness).

Hosea 6:1

Come, and let us return to the LORD; For He has torn, but He will heal us; He has stricken, but He will bind us up. 2 After two days He will revive us; On the third day He will raise us up, That we may live in His sight.

We can see examples of God's seven-fold vengeance on the enemies of Israel in the book of Esther. Recall that Haman, a type of the antichrist, tried to annihilate the Jewish people. His scheme failed and, in the end, Haman and his family are annihilated –

Esther 7:3-6,9,10

3 Then Queen Esther answered and said, "If I have found favor in your sight, O king, and if it pleases the king, let my life be given me at my petition, and my people at my request.

4 For we have been sold, my people and I, to be destroyed, to be killed, and to be annihilated. Had we been sold as male and female slaves, I would have held my tongue, although the enemy could never compensate for the king's loss."

5 So King Ahasuerus answered and said to Queen Esther, "Who is he, and where is he, who would dare presume in his heart to do such a thing?"

6 And Esther said, "The adversary and enemy is this wicked Haman!" So Haman was terrified before the king and queen.

9 Now Harbonah, one of the eunuchs, said to the king, "Look! The gallows, fifty cubits high, which Haman made for Mordecai, who spoke good on the king's behalf, is standing at the house of Haman." ¶ Then the king said, "Hang him on it!" 10 So they hanged Haman on the gallows that he had prepared for Mordecai. Then the king's wrath subsided.

Esther 8:1-5

On that day King Ahasuerus gave Queen Esther the house of Haman, the enemy of the Jews. And Mordecai came before the king, for Esther

2 So the king took off his signet ring, which he had taken from Haman, and gave it to Mordecai; and Esther appointed Mordecai over the house of Haman. 3 Now Esther spoke again to the king, fell down at his feet, and implored him with tears to counteract the evil of Haman the Agagite, and the scheme which he had devised against the Jews. 4 And the king held out the golden scepter toward Esther. So Esther arose and stood before the king, 5 and said, "If it pleases the king, and if I have found favor in his sight and the thing seems right to the king and I am pleasing in his eyes, let it be written to revoke the letters devised by Haman, the son of Hammedatha the Agagite, which he wrote to annihilate the Jews who are in all the king's provinces.

Esther 8:6-8

For how can I endure to see the evil that will come to my people? Or how can I endure to see the destruction of my countrymen?"

7 Then King Ahasuerus said to Queen Esther and Mordecai the Jew, "Indeed, I have given Esther the house of Haman, and they have hanged him on the gallows because he tried to lay his hand on the Jews.

8 You yourselves write a decree concerning the Jews, as you please, in the king's name, and seal it with the king's signet ring; for whatever is written in the king's name and sealed with the king's signet ring no one can revoke."

Esther 9:1,10

*1 Now in the twelfth month, that is, the month of Adar, on the thirteenth day, the time came for the king's command and his decree to be executed. On the day that the enemies of the Jews had hoped to overpower them, **the opposite occurred, in that the Jews themselves overpowered those who hated them. 10 the ten sons of Haman the son of Hammedatha, the enemy of the Jews—they killed...***

What was God's sevenfold vengeance against Haman (a type of the antichrist to come) according to Esther 9:1,10?

We can see another example of God's sevenfold vengeance in the book of Daniel.

Daniel 6:12, 16, 19-20, 24

*12 And they went before the king, and spoke concerning the king's decree: "Have you not signed a decree that every man who petitions any god or man within thirty days, except you, O king, shall be cast into the den of lions?" The king answered and said, "The thing is true, according to the law of the Medes and Persians, which does not alter." ... 16 So the king gave the command, and they brought Daniel and cast him into the den of lions. But the king spoke, saying to Daniel, "Your God, whom you serve continually, He will deliver you." ... 19 Then the king arose very early in the morning and went in haste to the den of lions. 20 And when he came to the den, he cried out with a lamenting voice to Daniel. The king spoke, saying to Daniel, "Daniel, servant of the living God, has your God, whom you serve continually, been able to deliver you from the lions?" ... 24 And the king gave the command, **and they brought those men who had accused Daniel, and they cast them into the den of lions--them, their children, and their wives; and the lions overpowered them, and broke all their bones in pieces before they ever came to the bottom of the den.***

How do we see God's seven-fold vengeance executed in Daniel 6:24?

How might we see God's protection for Israel in the flood of Noah's Day?

Daniel 3:10-12, 15-20, 24-25

10 "You, O king, have made a decree that everyone who hears the sound of the horn, flute, harp, lyre, and psaltery, in symphony with all kinds of music, shall fall down and worship the gold image; 11 "and whoever does not fall down and worship shall be cast into the midst of a burning fiery furnace. 12 "There are certain Jews whom you have set over the affairs of the province of Babylon: Shadrach, Meshach, and Abed-Nego; these men, O king, have not paid due regard to you. They do not serve your gods or worship the gold image which you have set up." ... 15 "Now if you are ready at the time you hear the sound of the horn, flute, harp, lyre, and psaltery, in symphony with all kinds of music, and you fall down and worship the image which I have made, good! But if you do not worship, you shall be cast immediately into the midst of a burning fiery furnace. And who is the god who will deliver you from my hands?" 16 Shadrach, Meshach, and Abed-Nego answered and said to the king, "O Nebuchadnezzar, we have no need to answer you in this matter. 17 "If that is the case, our God whom we serve is able to deliver us from the burning fiery furnace, and He will deliver us from your hand, O king. 18 "But if not, let it be known to you, O king, that we do not serve your gods, nor will we worship the gold image which you have set up." 19 Then Nebuchadnezzar was full of fury, and the expression on his face changed toward Shadrach, Meshach, and Abed-Nego. He spoke and commanded that they heat the furnace seven times more than it was usually heated. 20 And he commanded certain mighty men of valor who were in his army to bind Shadrach, Meshach, and Abed-Nego, and cast them into the burning fiery furnace. ... 24 Then King Nebuchadnezzar was astonished; and he rose in haste and spoke, saying to his counselors, "Did we not cast three men bound into the midst of the fire?" They answered and said to the king, "True, O king." 25 "Look!" he answered, "I see four men loose, walking in the midst of the fire; and they are not hurt, and the form of the fourth is like the Son of God."

How do we see God's protection in the passage above?

And during the tribulation, the Lord will intervene on behalf of His people, and He will execute sevenfold vengeance, complete vengeance, against the gentile nations that attempt to destroy Israel.

Genesis 12:3

I will bless those who bless you, And I will curse him who curses you; And in you all the families of the earth shall be blessed."

Psalm 79:1-13

*1... O God, the nations have come into Your inheritance; Your holy temple they have defiled; They have laid Jerusalem in heaps. 2 The dead bodies of Your servants They have given as food for the birds of the heavens, The flesh of Your saints to the beasts of the earth. 3 Their blood they have shed like water all around Jerusalem, And there was no one to bury them. 4 We have become a reproach to our neighbors, A scorn and derision to those who are around us. 5 How long, LORD? Will You be angry forever? Will Your jealousy burn like fire? 6 Pour out Your wrath on the nations that do not know You, And on the kingdoms that do not call on Your name. 7 For they have devoured Jacob, And laid waste his dwelling place. 8 Oh, do not remember former iniquities against us! Let Your tender mercies come speedily to meet us, For we have been brought very low. 9 Help us, O God of our salvation, For the glory of Your name; And deliver us, and provide atonement for our sins, For Your name's sake! 10 Why should the nations say, "Where is their God?" **Let there be known among the nations in our sight The avenging of the blood of Your servants which has been shed. 11 Let the groaning of the prisoner come before You; According to the greatness of Your power Preserve those who are appointed to die; 12 And return to our neighbors sevenfold into their bosom Their reproach with which they have reproached You, O Lord. 13 So we, Your people and sheep of Your pasture, Will give You thanks forever; We will show forth Your praise to all generations.***

In this dirge and prophetic prayer for Israel, please connect v.12 with the prophecy given in Gen. 4:15.

As emphasized previously, all of Scripture moves toward a seventh day, a seventh millennium, not toward the eternal ages beyond. We can see this in types, signs, and the prophetic Calendar seen in the Jewish Feasts.

Recall that The *LORD* set a mark on Cain, lest anyone finding him should kill him.

The word *mark* means *sign* and God placed a *sign or mark* of protection on Cain. Cain being a type of Israel, will rule in that Seventh Day Sabbath rest out ahead.

Let's examine the sign of the Sabbath given in Scripture, remembering that the Sabbath is a sign pointing to that future Day of Rest during Christ's Millennial Reign.

Exodus 20:8-11

8 "Remember the Sabbath day, to keep it holy. 9 Six days you shall labor and do all your work, 10 but the seventh day is the Sabbath of the LORD your God. In it you shall do no work: you, nor your son, nor your daughter, nor your male servant, nor your female servant, nor your cattle, nor your stranger who is within your gates. 11 For in six days the LORD made the heavens and the earth, the sea, and all that is in them, and rested the seventh day. Therefore the LORD blessed the Sabbath day and hallowed it.

According to v.8, what was Israel to do regarding the Sabbath Day? Why were they to do this according to v.11?

Exodus 31:13-16

13 "Speak also to the children of Israel, saying: 'Surely My Sabbaths you shall keep, for it is a sign between Me and you throughout your generations, that you may know that I am the LORD who sanctifies you. 14 'You shall keep the

Sabbath, therefore, for it is holy to you. Everyone who profanes it shall surely be put to death; for whoever does any work on it, that person shall be cut off from among his people. 15 'Work shall be done for six days, but the seventh is the Sabbath of rest, holy to the LORD. Whoever does any work on the Sabbath day, he shall surely be put to death. 16 'Therefore the children of Israel shall keep the Sabbath, to observe the Sabbath throughout their generations as a perpetual covenant.

According to v. 13, why was the Sabbath a sign between God and Israel?

The Sabbath was a sign between God and Israel that *they may know that it is the LORD who sanctifies them and they were to keep the Sabbath holy.*

What would happen if they did any work on the Sabbath?

How were the Jews *to observe the Sabbath throughout their generations, according to v. 16?*

Recall that in Gen. 2:3 –

God blessed the seventh day and sanctified it, because in it He rested from all His work which God had created and made.

Through the act of honoring and keeping the Sabbath, the Israelites formed a visible sign pointing to and confirming that *the LORD would sanctify them in the Sabbath Day.* The sign of the Sabbath pointed to the Lord's past, present, and future dealings with His people.

And the Israelites acknowledged this every time that they kept the Sabbath. The Jewish people, *working six days, then keeping the Sabbath*, recognized that *God was performing a subsequent restorative work lasting six days, 6,000 years; and He would then, at the completion of His work, rest the seventh day, the seventh 1,000 year period.*

And therefore the act of profaning and dishonoring the Sabbath was a serious offense, requiring serious consequences – including death.

In Gen. 4:15 we read that *Cain went out from the presence of the LORD and dwelt in the land of Nod on the east of Eden.*

To go out from the presence of the Lord was a significant punishment for Cain. He dwelt in the land of Nod. The word Nod means *vagrancy, wandering*. It was east of the Eden, the garden of pleasure.

Just as Cain's disobedience resulted in his being exiled from the land to the land of Nod, so it is with the result of Israel's disobedience – Israel was exiled from their land into the gentile lands.

And Israel had disregarded God's instructions regarding the land –

Leviticus 25:1-4

1 And the LORD spoke to Moses on Mount Sinai, saying, 2 "Speak to the children of Israel, and say to them: 'When you come into the land which I give you, then the land shall keep a sabbath to the LORD. 3 'Six years you shall sow your field, and six years you shall prune your vineyard, and gather its fruit; 4 'but in the seventh year there shall be a sabbath of solemn rest for the land, a sabbath to the LORD. You shall neither sow your field nor prune your vineyard.

What was Israel to do in the *seventh year*?

Israel's failure to obey God's Word regarding the Sabbath year resulted in Israel's removal from the land under Babylonian captivity in 605 B.C. This was the beginning point of the Times of the Gentiles as discussed in the previous lesson. (Please feel free to refer to the Times of the Gentiles chart in the appendix.)

2Chronicles 36:15-17, 19-21

*15 And the LORD God of their fathers sent warnings to them by His messengers, rising up early and sending them, because He had compassion on His people and on His dwelling place. 16 But they mocked the messengers of God, despised His words, and scoffed at His prophets, until the wrath of the LORD arose against His people, till there was no remedy. 17 Therefore He brought against them the king of the Chaldeans, who killed their young men with the sword in the house of their sanctuary, and had no compassion on young man or virgin, on the aged or the weak; He gave them all into his hand. ... 19 Then they burned the house of God, broke down the wall of Jerusalem, burned all its palaces with fire, and destroyed all its precious possessions. 20 And those who escaped from the sword he carried away to Babylon, where they became servants to him and his sons until the rule of the kingdom of Persia, **21 to fulfill the word of the LORD by the mouth of Jeremiah, until the land had enjoyed her Sabbaths. As long as she lay desolate she kept Sabbath, to fulfill seventy years.***

Israel was under captivity for 70 years as prophesized by the prophet Jeremiah years earlier –

2 in the first year of his reign, I, Daniel, perceived in the books the number of years that, according to the word of the LORD to Jeremiah the prophet, must pass before the end of the desolations of Jerusalem, namely, seventy years.

Dan. 9:2 ESV

How many sabbath or sabbatical years were not kept?

The nation had not kept the sabbath year for the land for four hundred and ninety years (7x 70=490 years as the sabbatical year was observed every seventh year under the Mosaic law according to Lev. 25:4 – *but in the seventh year there shall be a sabbath of solemn rest for the land, a sabbath to the LORD. You shall neither sow your field nor prune your vineyard*).

So, from the beginning of the times of the kings (of Israel) to the time of the Babylonian captivity there were seventy sabbath years that were not kept, the number of years of the captivity in Babylon.

Jeremiah 25:11-12

11 'And this whole land shall be a desolation and an astonishment, and these nations shall serve the king of Babylon seventy years. 12 'Then it will come to pass, when seventy years are completed, that I will punish the king of Babylon and that nation, the land of the Chaldeans, for their iniquity,' says the LORD; 'and I will make it a perpetual desolation.

Remember, through the act of honoring and keeping the Sabbath, the Israelites formed a visible **sign pointing to and confirming that *the LORD would sanctify them in the Sabbath Day***. The sign of the Sabbath pointed to the Lord's past, present, and future dealings with His people.

To disobey the Sabbaths and Sabbatical years was to disregard and dishonor God's restorative work for His people in the Sabbath Day Rest out ahead, in the Messianic era.

Genesis 4:16-24

16 Then Cain went out from the presence of the LORD and dwelt in the land of Nod on the east of Eden. 17 And Cain knew his wife, and she conceived and bore Enoch. And he built a city, and called the name of the city after the name of his son--Enoch. 18 To Enoch was born Irad; and Irad begot Methusael, and Methusael begot Lamech. 19 Then Lamech took for

himself two wives: the name of one was Adah, and the name of the second was Zillah. 20 And Adah bore Jabal. He was the father of those who dwell in tents and have livestock. 21 His brother's name was Jubal. He was the father of all those who play the harp and flute. 22 And as for Zillah, she also bore Tubal-Cain, an instructor of every craftsman in bronze and iron. And the sister of Tubal-Cain was Naamah. 23 Then Lamech said to his wives: "Adah and Zillah, hear my voice; Wives of Lamech, listen to my speech! For I have killed a man for wounding me, Even a young man for hurting me. 24 If Cain shall be avenged sevenfold, Then Lamech seventy-sevenfold."

The origin of Cain's wife is not mentioned in Scripture but since Gen. 5:4 says *Adam begot sons and daughters*, Cain could have married his sister or a distant relative. (Please take note that the Enoch, Methushael, and Lamech mentioned in Gen. 4 are not the same individuals mentioned in Gen. 5.)

What does this passage say about the sons of Lamech – Jabal, Jubal, and Tubal-Cain?

We will end here and finish up our Genesis Part 2 study in our next lesson. Keep pressing on.

Philippians 3:12-14

12 Not that I have already attained, or am already perfected; but I press on, that I may lay hold of that for which Christ Jesus has also laid hold of me. 13 Brethren, I do not count myself to have apprehended; but one thing I do, forgetting those things which are behind and reaching forward to those things which are ahead, 14 I press toward the goal for the prize of the upward call of God in Christ Jesus.

The Book of Genesis Part 2

Lesson Thirteen – Cain Avenged Sevenfold / Lamech Seventy-sevenfold

Objective of Lesson Thirteen: the spiritual significance of *Cain being avenged sevenfold and Lamech seventy-sevenfold*

In our last lesson we learned that the *LORD set a mark on Cain, lest anyone finding him should kill him.*

The word *mark* means *sign* and God placed a *sign or mark* of protection on Cain. Cain being a type of Israel, will rule in that Seventh Day Sabbath rest out ahead.

We examined the Sabbath as a sign pointing to that future Day of Rest during Christ's Millennial Reign.

In Gen. 4:15 we read that *Cain went out from the presence of the LORD and dwelt in the land of Nod on the east of Eden.*

To go out from the presence of the Lord was a significant punishment for Cain. He dwelt in the land of Nod. The word Nod means *vagrancy, wandering*. It was east of the Eden, the garden of pleasure.

And as Cain forms a type of Israel, because of Israel's disobedience, the nation was scattered out amongst the gentile nations. The Times of the Gentiles began in 605 B.C. when Israel was removed from the land under Babylonian captivity. Israel was in the land at Christ's first coming yet the land was under gentile Roman rulership. They were again completely scattered amongst the Gentile nations in A.D. 70.

In this last lesson of Genesis Part 2, we will study the significance of Cain's genealogy and the type seen in Seth.

Genesis 4:16-24

*16 Then Cain went out from the presence of the LORD and dwelt in the land of Nod on the east of Eden. 17 And Cain knew his wife, and she conceived and bore Enoch. And he built a city, and called the name of the city after the name of his son--Enoch. 18 To Enoch was born Irad; and Irad begot Mehujael, and Mehujael begot Methushael, and Methushael begot Lamech. 19 Then Lamech took for himself two wives: the name of one was Adah, and the name of the second was Zillah. 20 And Adah bore Jabal. He was the father of those who dwell in tents and have livestock. 21 His brother's name was Jubal. He was the father of all those who play the harp and flute. 22 And as for Zillah, she also bore Tubal-Cain, an instructor of every craftsman in bronze and iron. And the sister of Tubal-Cain was Naamah. 23 Then Lamech said to his wives: "Adah and Zillah, hear my voice; Wives of Lamech, listen to my speech! For I have killed a man for wounding me, Even a young man for hurting me. 24 If Cain shall be avenged sevenfold, **Then Lamech seventy-sevenfold.**"*

Enoch, the son of Cain, means *dedicated*. Enoch had a son (great grandson) named Lamech, whose name means *powerful*. What does this passage say about the sons of Lamech?

What do vv. 23-24 say about Lamech and what did he do?

Verses 23,24 may seem a bit unusual at first until you let Scripture comment on Scripture and examine the types and antitypes given in these verses.

Lamech, whose name means *powerful*, misused the arms which his sons invented. It appears that he was a proud and boastful individual with little remorse for his actions.

Lamech knew that his vengeful actions in murdering a man who wounded him would have spawned an avenger. And, as has also been noted, Lamech was a man of great pride. His ego, in relation to his own death at the hands of an avenger, would have, in turn, demanded that the act of avenging him to be great – greater than even his ancestor Cain – **seventy-sevenfold** greater. **Seventy-sevenfold means seventy times seven.**

Although Lamech's use of the number seventy-sevenfold may have been for the desire of his death to be exponentially more significant than Cain's, the use of the number seventy times seven ($70 \times 7 = 490$ years) has greater spiritual significance. Can you think of any other passages in Scripture where 70×7 is used?

Since Cain is a type of Israel, what might v. 24 signify?

Recall that **Cain's avenger is avenged seven times –**

*And the LORD said to him, "Therefore, **whoever kills Cain, vengeance shall be taken on him sevenfold.**" And the LORD set a mark on Cain, lest anyone finding him should kill him. Gen. 4:15*

Lamech is also a type of Israel but Israel in a time yet future, the tribulation period, the Seventh Week of Daniel. And at that time, the Gentile nations that come against Israel, and try to "kill" or exterminate Israel, will be **avenged not sevenfold but seventy-sevenfold.**

Let's study some of the passages regarding the seventy-sevenfold vengeance against the avenger of Israel in a time yet future.

Matthew 24:15, 21-22

15 "Therefore when you see the 'abomination of desolation,' spoken of by Daniel the prophet, standing in the holy place" (whoever reads, let him understand), ...

21 "For then there will be great tribulation, such as has not been since the beginning of the world until this time, no, nor ever shall be. 22 "And unless those days were shortened, no flesh would be saved; but for the elect's sake those days will be shortened.

What did Jesus tell His disciples regarding the conditions on the earth during that future time known as the Great Tribulation?

Zechariah 14:12

12 And this shall be the plague with which the LORD will strike all the people who fought against Jerusalem: Their flesh shall dissolve while they stand on their feet, Their eyes shall dissolve in their sockets, And their tongues shall dissolve in their mouths.

According to this verse, what will the Lord do to those *who fought against Jerusalem*?

In Chapters 1-3 of Revelation, we see the Lord addressing the churches regarding His judgment for Christians at the Judgment Seat of Christ. Chapters 4-22 of Revelation deal with events that will occur **after** the church is raptured.

In Rev. 5 and 6, the seven-sealed scroll which Christ took from His Father's right hand (Rev. 5) contained *God's redemptive terms for the forfeited inheritance, the domain which Christ and His co-heirs were about to rule* (cf. Ps. 2:6-9; Rev. 2:26-28). The inheritance is the land, the earth, currently ruled over by Satan (Eph. 6: 12,13).

And this scroll contained *the entirety* of these redemptive terms.

A summary of Rev. 6-19 and the judgments on the earth and against the Gentile nation that come against Israel is given below.

After the seventh seal is broken, we read –

Revelation 6:14-17

14 Then the sky receded as a scroll when it is rolled up, and every mountain and island was moved out of its place. 15 And the kings of the earth, the great men, the rich men, the commanders, the mighty men, every slave and every free man, hid themselves in the caves and in the rocks of the mountains, 16 and said to the mountains and rocks, "Fall on us and hide us from the face of Him who sits on the throne and from the wrath of the Lamb! 17 "For the great day of His wrath has come, and who is able to stand?"

In the Book of Revelation, *completeness* is shown by the breaking of the seven seals on the scroll, *completeness* is again shown by the sounding of the seven trumpets, and *completeness* is again shown by the pouring out of the seven vials.

The sounding of the seven trumpets forms the judgments revealed when the seventh seal on the scroll is broken.

Revelation 8:6-13

*6 So the seven angels who had the seven trumpets prepared themselves to sound. 7 The first angel sounded: And **hail and fire** followed, **mingled with blood**, and they were thrown to the earth. And a third of the trees were burned up, and all green grass was burned up. 8 Then the second angel sounded: And something like a great mountain burning with fire was thrown into the sea, and **a third of***

the sea became blood. 9 And a third of the living creatures in the sea died, and a third of the ships were destroyed. 10 Then the third angel sounded: And a great star fell from heaven, burning like a torch, and it fell on a third of the rivers and on the springs of water. 11 The name of the star is Wormwood. A third of the waters became wormwood, and many men died from the water, because it was made bitter. 12 Then the fourth angel sounded: And a third of the sun was struck, a third of the moon, and a third of the stars, so that a third of them were darkened. A third of the day did not shine, and likewise the night. 13 And I looked, and I heard an angel flying through the midst of heaven, saying with a loud voice, "Woe, woe, woe to the inhabitants of the earth, because of the remaining blasts of the trumpet of the three angels who are about to sound!"

Describe the judgments seen on the earth, and against the Gentiles, according to this passage.

Can you think of a Gentile nation in the Old Testament that experienced similar judgments?

The judgments seen through the opening of the 7th seal are foreshadowed by the 10 plagues visited upon the Egyptians, prior to the Exodus.

Exodus 9:18

18 "Behold, tomorrow about this time I will cause very heavy hail to rain down, such as has not been in Egypt since its founding until now.

Psalm 78:43-55

43 When He worked His signs in Egypt, And His wonders in the field of Zoan; 44 Turned their rivers into blood, And their streams, that they could not drink. 45 He sent swarms of flies among them, which devoured them, And frogs, which destroyed them. 46 He also gave their crops to the caterpillar, And their labor to the locust. 47 He destroyed their vines with hail, And their sycamore trees with frost. 48 He also gave up their cattle to the hail, And their flocks to fiery lightning. 49 He cast on them the fierceness of His anger, Wrath, indignation, and trouble, By sending angels of destruction among them. 50 He made a path for His anger; He did not spare their soul from death, But gave their life over to the plague, 51 And destroyed all the firstborn in Egypt, The first of their strength in the tents of Ham. 52 But He made His own people go forth like sheep, And guided them in the wilderness like a flock; 53 And He led them on safely, so that they did not fear; But the sea overwhelmed their enemies. 54 And He brought them to His holy border, This mountain which His right hand had acquired. 55 He also drove out the nations before them, Allotted them an inheritance by survey, And made the tribes of Israel dwell in their tents.

Exodus 10:7

7 Then Pharaoh's servants said to him, "How long shall this man be a snare to us? Let the men go, that they may serve the LORD their God. Do you not yet know that Egypt is destroyed?"

And just as *Egypt is destroyed* through the 10 plagues, so the Antichrist's worldwide kingdom will be *destroyed* through the judgments contained in the 7th seal.

In Rev. 16:2-17, seven angels are each given a vial, and these angels pour out their vials in successive order.

Revelation 16:1-6, 8-10, 12-14, 16-18, 21

1 Then I heard a loud voice from the temple saying to the seven angels, "Go and pour out the bowls of the wrath of God on the earth." 2 So the first went and poured out his bowl upon the earth, and a foul and loathsome sore came upon

the men who had the mark of the beast and those who worshiped his image. 3 Then the second angel poured out his bowl on the sea, and it became blood as of a dead man; and every living creature in the sea died. 4 Then the third angel poured out his bowl on the rivers and springs of water, and they became blood. 5 And I heard the angel of the waters saying: "You are righteous, O Lord, The One who is and who was and who is to be, Because You have judged these things. 6 For they have shed the blood of saints and prophets, And You have given them blood to drink. For it is their just due." ... 8 Then the fourth angel poured out his bowl on the sun, and power was given to him to scorch men with fire. 9 And men were scorched with great heat, and they blasphemed the name of God who has power over these plagues; and they did not repent and give Him glory. 10 Then the fifth angel poured out his bowl on the throne of the beast, and his kingdom became full of darkness; and they gnawed their tongues because of the pain. ... 12 Then the sixth angel poured out his bowl on the great river Euphrates, and its water was dried up, so that the way of the kings from the east might be prepared. 13 And I saw three unclean spirits like frogs coming out of the mouth of the dragon, out of the mouth of the beast, and out of the mouth of the false prophet. 14 For they are spirits of demons, performing signs, which go out to the kings of the earth and of the whole world, to gather them to the battle of that great day of God Almighty. ... 16 And they gathered them together to the place called in Hebrew, Armageddon. 17 Then the seventh angel poured out his bowl into the air, and a loud voice came out of the temple of heaven, from the throne, saying, "It is done!" 18 And there were noises and thunderings and lightnings; and there was a great earthquake, such a mighty and great earthquake as had not occurred since men were on the earth. ... 21 And great hail from heaven fell upon men, each hailstone about the weight of a talent. Men blasphemed God because of the plague of the hail, since that plague was exceedingly great.

Describe the 7 vial judgments on the Gentile nations that come against Israel at the conclusion of the Great Tribulation. Can you see that the Gentile nations that come against Israel, in a time yet future (the tribulation period; the Seventh Week of Daniel), will be avenged not sevenfold but *seventy-sevenfold in intensity* as mentioned by Lamech in Gen. 4?

Of note is that Israel will also be judged seven times for their sins according to **Leviticus 26:21-24** –

*21 'Then, if you walk contrary to Me, and are not willing to obey Me, I will bring on you seven times more plagues, according to your sins. 22 **I will also send wild beasts among you, which shall rob you of your children, destroy your livestock, and make you few in number; and your highways shall be desolate. 23 'And if by these things you are not reformed by Me, but walk contrary to Me, 24 then I also will walk contrary to you, and **I will punish you yet seven times for your sins.*****

Who might the beasts in v. 22 be referring to?

The beasts in the above passage represent the Gentile nations that come against Israel in the tribulation period. Beasts are also described in Daniel and Revelation.

Daniel 7:1-8, 16-19, 23, 25, 27

*1 In the first year of Belshazzar king of Babylon, Daniel had a dream and visions of his head while on his bed. Then he wrote down the dream, telling the main facts. 2 Daniel spoke, saying, "I saw in my vision by night, and behold, the four winds of heaven were stirring up the Great Sea. 3 "And four great beasts came up from the sea, each different from the other. 4 "**The first was like a lion, and had eagle's wings. I watched till its wings were plucked off; and it was lifted up from the earth and made to stand on two feet like a man, and a man's heart was given to it. 5 "And suddenly **another beast, a second, like a bear. It was raised up on one side, and had three ribs in its mouth between its teeth. And they said thus to it: 'Arise, devour much flesh!' 6 "After this I looked, and **there was another, like a leopard, which had on its back four wings of a bird. The beast also had four heads, and dominion was given to it. 7 "After this I saw in the night visions, and behold, **a fourth beast, dreadful and terrible, exceedingly*********

strong. *It had huge iron teeth; it was devouring, breaking in pieces, and trampling the residue with its feet. It was different from all the beasts that were before it, and it had ten horns. 8 "I was considering the horns, and there was another horn, a little one, coming up among them, before whom three of the first horns were plucked out by the roots. And there, in this horn, were eyes like the eyes of a man, and a mouth speaking pompous words. ... 16 "I came near to one of those who stood by and asked him the truth of all this. So he told me and made known to me the interpretation of these things: 17 'Those great beasts, which are four, are four kings which arise out of the earth. 18 'But the saints of the Most High shall receive the kingdom, and possess the kingdom forever, even forever and ever.' 19 "Then I wished to know the truth about the fourth beast, which was different from all the others, exceedingly dreadful, with its teeth of iron and its nails of bronze, which devoured, broke in pieces, and trampled the residue with its feet; ... 23 "Thus he said: 'The fourth beast shall be A fourth kingdom on earth, Which shall be different from all other kingdoms, And shall devour the whole earth, Trample it and break it in pieces. ... 25 He shall speak pompous words against the Most High, Shall persecute the saints of the Most High, And shall intend to change times and law. Then the saints shall be given into his hand For a time and times and half a time. ... 27 Then the kingdom and dominion, And the greatness of the kingdoms under the whole heaven, Shall be given to the people, the saints of the Most High. His kingdom is an everlasting kingdom, And all dominions shall serve and obey Him.'*

The fourth beast is the antichrist that will come against the saints-God's people Israel, during the tribulation period. How is this beast described in this passage?

Revelation 13:1-3, 6-8

1 Then I stood on the sand of the sea. And I saw a beast rising up out of the sea, having seven heads and ten horns, and on his horns ten crowns, and on his heads a blasphemous name. 2 Now the beast which I saw was like a leopard, his feet were like the feet of a bear, and his mouth like the mouth of a lion. The dragon

gave him his power, his throne, and great authority. 3 And I saw one of his heads as if it had been mortally wounded, and his deadly wound was healed. And all the world marveled and followed the beast. ... 6 Then he opened his mouth in blasphemy against God, to blaspheme His name, His tabernacle, and those who dwell in heaven. 7 It was granted to him to make war with the saints and to overcome them. And authority was given him over every tribe, tongue, and nation. 8 All who dwell on the earth will worship him, whose names have not been written in the Book of Life of the Lamb slain from the foundation of the world.

Please list the similarities between the Daniel and Revelation passages given above.

The greater part of the Book of Daniel deals with those future times when the Times of the Gentiles are fulfilled and Gentile World Power is destroyed, but not before God's elect – Israel - suffers such persecution and tribulation such as *there never was 'since the beginning of the world until this time nor ever shall be'* (Mt.24:21). Revelation chapters 6 through 19 cover that same period of time.

Daniel's dream was of four great Beasts reigning successively from Babylon. The Beasts depicted four empires who would have their power base in Babylon and the surrounding area. These four successive empires are the same empires mentioned in Daniel 2, depicted as the Great Image standing in Babylon. The fourth kingdom is a compilation of the prior three.

Daniel 2:1, 26, 28, 31-41, 43-45

1 Now in the second year of Nebuchadnezzar's reign, Nebuchadnezzar had dreams; and his spirit was so troubled that his sleep left him. ... 26 The king answered and said to Daniel, whose name was Belteshazzar, "Are you able to make known to me the dream which I have seen, and its interpretation?" ... 28 "But there is a God in heaven who reveals secrets, and He has made known to King Nebuchadnezzar what will be in the latter days. Your dream, and the visions of your head upon your bed, were these: ... 31 "You, O king, were watching; and behold, a great image! This great image, whose splendor was excellent, stood before you; and its form was awesome. 32 **"This image's head was of fine gold, its chest and arms of silver, its belly and thighs of bronze, 33 "its legs of iron, its feet partly of iron and partly of clay.** 34 "You watched while a stone was cut out without hands, which struck the image on its feet of iron and clay, and broke them in pieces. 35 "Then the iron, the clay, the bronze, the silver, and the gold were crushed together, and became like chaff from the summer threshing floors; the wind carried them away so that no trace of them was found. And the stone that struck the image became a great mountain and filled the whole earth. 36 "This is the dream. Now we will tell the interpretation of it before the king. 37 **"You, O king,** are a king of kings. For the God of heaven has given you a kingdom, power, strength, and glory; 38 "and wherever the children of men dwell, or the beasts of the field and the birds of the heaven, He has given them into your hand, and has made you ruler over them all--you are this **head of gold.** 39 **"But after you shall arise another kingdom inferior to yours; then another, a third kingdom of bronze, which shall rule over all the earth. 40 "And the fourth kingdom shall be as strong as iron,** inasmuch as iron breaks in pieces and shatters everything; and like iron that crushes, that kingdom will break in pieces and crush all the others. 41 "Whereas you saw the feet and toes, partly of potter's clay and partly of iron, the kingdom shall be divided; yet the strength of the iron shall be in it, just as you saw the iron mixed with ceramic clay. ... 43 "As you saw iron mixed with ceramic clay, they will mingle with the seed of men; but they will not adhere to one another, just as iron does not mix with clay. 44 "And in the days of these kings the God of heaven will set up a kingdom which shall never be destroyed; and the kingdom shall not be left to other people; it shall break in pieces and consume all these kingdoms, and it shall stand forever. 45 "Inasmuch as you saw that the stone was cut out of the mountain without hands, and that it broke in pieces the iron, the bronze, the clay, the silver, and the gold--the great God has made known to the king what will come to pass after this. The dream is certain, and its interpretation is sure."

Please see the handouts at the end of this lesson regarding the Great Image in Babylon and the table on the Babylonian Kingdoms.

The first beast, the lion, represents the Babylonian Kingdom. In history, this Kingdom was replaced by the bear, the Medes and Persians. The third beast, the leopard, represents the Grecian Empire under Alexander the Great. (The Greek Hellenistic empire was absorbed into the Roman Empire, so they are basically one in the same.)

After the cross, Israel has been set aside and the time clock is on hold while God deals with the church. After the rapture of the church, the time clock for Israel restarts and this is when we see the fourth beast, the terrible beast, come onto the scene during the tribulation period. This fourth kingdom is the antichrist's kingdom and the antichrist will be an Assyrian, with his seat of government in Babylon (see Isa. 10:24; Isa. 14:24; Micah 5:5,6).

Returning to Gen. 4, Lamech's reference to being avenged *seventy-sevenfold* refers to seventy multiplied by seven which equals 490. Do you recall the significance of 490 in the book of Daniel?

The 490 years is a prophetic period of time. Lamech, the sixth from Cain and seventh from Adam, also represents Israel but Israel that killed a man named Jesus and Israel that will be judged and brought to a place of repentance during the seven- year tribulation. We can see a reference to 490 years in the Book of Daniel. So, let's briefly revisit the significance of the seventy weeks of Daniel.

Please take note that seven years is often referred to as a week in Scripture. Please also take note that the Book of Daniel addresses the Nation of Israel, not the Church.

Daniel Chapter 2 is the foundational chapter for understanding the rest of the Book of Daniel. It gives a complete overview of **The Times of the Gentiles** beginning with Nebuchadnezzar through to when **The Times of the Gentiles** are fulfilled, and the Millennial Kingdom of Christ is set up. Please review the Times of the Gentiles timeline at the end of the chapter.

Luke 21:24

*24 "And they will fall by the edge of the sword, and be led away captive into all nations. And Jerusalem will be trampled by Gentiles until **the times of the Gentiles** are fulfilled.*

The Book of Daniel deals with the Jewish people in relation to The Times of the Gentiles, with a particular emphasis on that which will occur during the final seven years of this time.

The Times of the Gentiles is that period of time when Israel finds the scepter removed from her hand and placed in the hands of the Gentile nations.

Due to Israel's disobedience, Israel was taken captive in the year 605 B.C. by the Babylonian Empire ruled by King Nebuchadnezzar. Daniel, a prophet of Israel was taken into Babylonian captivity during this period.

Daniel 9:24-27

24 "Seventy weeks are determined For your people and for your holy city, To finish the transgression, To make an end of sins, To make reconciliation for iniquity, To bring in everlasting righteousness, To seal up vision and prophecy, And to anoint the Most Holy. 25 "Know therefore and understand, That from the going forth of the command To restore and build Jerusalem Until Messiah the Prince, There shall be seven weeks and sixty-two weeks; The street shall be built again, and the wall, Even in troublesome times. 26 "And after the sixty-two weeks Messiah shall be cut off, but not for Himself; And the people of the prince who is to come Shall destroy the city and the sanctuary. The end of it shall be with a flood, And till the end of the war desolations are determined. 27 Then he shall confirm a covenant with many for one week; But in the middle of the week He shall bring an end to sacrifice and offering. And on the wing of abominations

shall be one who makes desolate, Even until the consummation, which is determined, Is poured out on the desolate."

In the above passage, noting that **a week equals seven years**, Daniel says *Seventy weeks are determined For your people and for your holy city, To finish the transgression, To make an end of sins.*

In v. 25, how many weeks (a week equals a 7-year period) would go by until the Messiah Jesus would be cut off?

In v. 25 it says *from the going forth of the command To restore and build Jerusalem Until Messiah the Prince, There shall **be seven weeks and sixty-two weeks.***

(Please refer to the Times of the Gentiles timeline at the end of the lesson.)

As mentioned earlier, Daniel deals with the nation of Israel.

A week = 7 years in Daniel's prophecy given in Daniel 9.
 Seventy weeks are determined for Israel to finish or make an end to their transgressions and seventy weeks = 70×7 years = 490 years total.

In Daniel 9:25 it says that *from the going forth of the command to restore and build Jerusalem Until Messiah the Prince, There shall be seven weeks and sixty-two weeks...*

| | |
|---|---|
| <p>Seven weeks=seven 7-year period- At the end of this period, the temple was rebuilt.</p> | <p>$7 \times 7 = 49$ yrs</p> |
| <p>Sixty-two weeks= sixty-two 7-year period- At the end of this period, Messiah is cut off (crucifixion).</p> | <p>$62 \times 7 = 434$ yrs</p> |

The beginning of Jerusalem's restoration occurred in 445 B.C. and this was the beginning of Daniel's 70 Weeks or 70×7 years which equals 490 years. The

restoration of Jerusalem was completed in 397 B.C. This was the first seven weeks (7 x 7 years).

After the restoration of Jerusalem in 397 B.C., we see that there are 62 weeks (or 62 x 7 years=434 years) until Messiah is cut off at the cross. So, we have the first 7 x 7-year period with the rebuilding of Jerusalem followed by 62 x 7-year period until the Messiah is crucified or *cut off*.

If we add up 7 weeks and 62 weeks, we have a total of 69 weeks or 483 years. **We still have one more week (one week equals 7 years) to complete Daniel's 70 Week (490 year) prophecy.**

After the cross, Israel has been set aside while God deals with the Church. After the Church is raptured, God deals again with Israel in the 7-year tribulation known as the 70th week of Daniel. Daniel 9:26,27 speaks of this time.

As stated above, Daniel says ***Seventy weeks are determined For your people and for your holy city, To finish the transgression, To make an end of sins.*** Seventy weeks equals 70 x 7 years which equals 490 years (7x7x10). Ten is the number of completion, so 490 years represents a complete period of time, after which Israel will be forgiven of their sins (debt of sin) and brought into the Land as in the Jubilee year, in the 1,000-year Messianic era.

Their debts (sin debts) will be paid, and their celebratory Jubilee Year will be experienced in His Glorious Kingdom out ahead!

[Remember that this 50th year, the Jubilee Year, follows seven 7-year periods (Seven Sabbatical years=7x7). The Year of Jubilee portrays a future time when Israel will be restored by their Messiah Jesus and brought into their land in the Messianic Kingdom. They will no longer be under the oppression of Gentile rule and they will be set free. After 490 years (7x 7x10 years), their debt of sin will be forgiven after they appropriate the blood of their Passover Lamb, Jesus, and are brought to a place of repentance. This Jubilee will be fulfilled and completed at the end of 7x7x10 years= 490 years (10 being the number of completion)].

(For further study regarding Daniel's Seventy week prophecy, please refer to the handout in the appendix entitled **Daniel's 70 weeks**, along with the timeline entitled **The Times of the Gentiles and Daniel's 70 Weeks**.)

Peter, who was of Jewish blood, asked Jesus *how often shall my brother sin against me, and I forgive him?*

Matthew 18:21-22

*21 Then Peter came to Him and said, "Lord, how often shall my brother sin against me, and I forgive him? Up to seven times?" 22 Jesus said to him, "I do not say to you, up to seven times, but up to **seventy times seven**."*

How many times did Jesus tell Peter he was to forgive his brethren?

Remember that a week equals a 7-year period. Jesus tells Peter (His Jewish brethren) that they should forgive **seventy times seven** which represents a 490-year period after which Israel's sins are forgiven and they are set free from Gentile rule and brought into their covenanted land.

As you can see, there is so much prophecy in the Book of Genesis and God does indeed tell *the end from the beginning* –

Isaiah 46:9-10

*9 Remember the former things of old, For I am God, and there is no other; I am God, and there is none like Me, 10 **Declaring the end from the beginning, And from ancient times things that are not yet done, Saying, 'My counsel shall stand, And I will do all My pleasure,'***

One last point to note. In the genealogy of Cain given in Gen. 4, Lamech is the sixth generation from Adam. Do you recall what the number six represents in Scripture?

Six represents man's Day in Scripture and recall *that with the Lord one day is as a thousand years, and a thousand years as one day* (2Peter 3:8).

The first man, Adam, and his wife were disqualified from rulership because of the introduction of sin, as a result of the Woman having been deceived by the serpent. And in order to redeem fallen Man and the material creation ruined with him, God would work for 6 days, 6000 years, in order to fulfill His purpose for the 7th Day. (Please review the Basic Timeline and the timeline entitled **The Times of the Gentiles and Daniel's 70 Weeks** in the appendix.)

Perhaps Cain, being scattered from the land, points to Israel being scattered from the land in A.D. 70 while Lamech, being the sixth generation of Adam's descendants, points to a time when man's day (the sixth day) will end at the conclusion of the tribulation. Then Christ will restore all things in the Seventh Day Sabbath Rest out ahead.

Act 3:20-21

20 "and that He may send Jesus Christ, who was preached to you before, 21 "whom heaven must receive until the times of restoration of all things, which God has spoken by the mouth of all His holy prophets since the world began.

However, before the times of restoration, what must occur first regarding Israel?

Luke 21:24

"And they will fall by the edge of the sword, and be led away captive into all nations. And Jerusalem will be trampled by Gentiles until the times of the Gentiles are fulfilled.

At the mid-point in Daniel's seventieth week, the mid tribulation period, the Jewish people will be *trampled by Gentiles* under the antichrist. And they will be cast out of their land.

In order for the Jewish people to be cast out of their land, in fulfillment of what is prophetically given in Luke 21:24, **they had to be in the land first**. This occurred in May 1948, when Israel became a nation and a remnant of the Jews returned to the land.

However, Israel is prematurely in the land. Scripture is clear that Israel **must first repent and recognize Him who they pierced** (Zech. 12:10) before they will be brought back into the land.

(Jonah is an Old Testament book that portrays this fascinating topic. For further study, I highly recommend Arlen Chitwood's book entitled, "**O SLEEPER! ARISE, CALL...!**")

Although we do not know the exact day nor the hour of our Lord's return, we can certainly see "the stage being set" so to speak. And the Lord will not tarry. He will return right on time, at His appointed time –

Habakkuk 2:2-4

*2 Then the LORD answered me and said: "Write the vision And make it plain on tablets, That he may run who reads it. 3 For the vision is yet for an appointed time; But at the end it will speak, and it will not lie. Though it tarries, wait for it; Because it will surely come, It will not tarry. 4 "Behold the proud, His soul is not upright in him; But **the just shall live by his faith.***

According to v. 4, how are we to live?

We are to live by faith, faith in the Lord's promises given in His Word. God's timeline will unfold at His appointed time and His Word will not return void.

Isaiah 55:11

11 So shall My word be that goes forth from My mouth; It shall not return to Me void, But it shall accomplish what I please, And it shall prosper in the thing for which I sent it.

And remember, everything will pass away **except the words of the Lord Jesus.**

Matthew 24:35

35 "Heaven and earth will pass away, but My words will by no means pass away.

Isaiah 40:6-8

*6 The voice said, "Cry out!" And he said, "What shall I cry?" "All flesh is grass, And all its loveliness is like the flower of the field. 7 The grass withers, the flower fades, Because the breath of the LORD blows upon it; Surely the people are grass. 8 The grass withers, the flower fades, **But the word of our God stands forever.**"*

Now let's return to Gen. 4.

Genesis 4:25-26

25 And Adam knew his wife again, and she bore a son and named him Seth, "For God has appointed another seed for me instead of Abel, whom Cain killed." 26 And as for Seth, to him also a son was born; and he named him Enosh. Then men began to call on the name of the LORD.

Cain's descendants are mentioned only to the seventh generation in Gen. 4. Cain's line did not survive after the flood of Noah's day. In Gen. Part 3, we will learn that the line of Seth alone survived the flood.

Read the genealogy of Jesus (the bloodline genealogy) given in Luke 3:23-38. In v. 8, how are Seth and Adam described?

Seth means *compensation*. The root word of Seth means *to set, appoint, put in order*.

God has appointed another seed, instead of Abel. Remember, according to Gen. 3:15, God said –

And I will put enmity Between you and the woman, And between your seed and her Seed; He shall bruise your head, And you shall bruise His heel."

And God's promises to send the Redeemer, the Seed of the Woman, would be realized through the bloodline of Seth, not Cain.

Seth had a son named Enosh which means *man*. According to Gen. 5:11, Enosh lived for 905 years!

What did men begin to do according to Gen. 4:26?

In v. 26 we read that *then men began to call on the name of the LORD*. The word *then* implies that men began *to call on the name of the LORD* after the birth of Enosh.

The word *call* means to *call, cry out, recite, read, proclaim*. The phrase *on the name* means *to name*. It comes from the root word *śûm*, meaning to *appoint, set or make for a sign*. The word *LORD* means *Jehovah* and was the name of the One True God of the Hebrews.

Perhaps v.26 is implying that at the time of Enosh's birth, men began to cry out to the Lord and call on the name of the Lord, the Appointed One, the Seed

of the Woman. They would associate themselves or call themselves *by the name of the Lord*.

And they trusted in the promises of God to send a Redeemer. Through the bloodline of Seth and Enos, would come Noah. And through Noah's son Shem, would come Abraham and his descendants, the nation of Israel. And *the LORD, Jehovah* would be the God of Israel.

And it is only through Israel, under Jehovah God, that salvation would come.

Psalm 3:8

8 Salvation belongs to the LORD. Your blessing is upon Your people. Selah

Remember, that through Israel would come the oracles of God and the incarnate Word of God, Jesus Christ, who is the Seed of the Woman and the Redeemer!

One last but important point regarding Seth. A third son is born who replaced Abel, the son God had accepted. As Abel pictures Christ in death, so Seth pictures Christ in resurrection. Of the 2 sons of Adam alive at this time, it is only Seth who has a God and only Seth through whom God will work. As we previously read, through Seth would come the *Seed of the Woman, the Resurrection, and the Life*. Seth then pictures the resurrected Christ.

John 11:25

25 Jesus said to her, "I am the resurrection and the life. He who believes in Me, though he may die, he shall live.

Please read Genesis 5, which discusses Adam's family record. What generation is Enoch and what generation is Noah?

Enoch, **the seventh generation from Adam**, had a son named Methuselah (who lived 969 years), and Methuselah had a son named Lamech who had a son named Noah. Enoch was the great grandfather of Noah and **Noah was the tenth generation from Adam**. After Enoch was taken up, the worldwide flood occurred.

And in Gen. Part 3, we will see that *just as* Enoch was *taken up* by God, so will the church be raptured or taken up by God (1 Thess. 4:13-18).

The flood of Noah's Day is a type of the seven-year tribulation. After the rapture of the church (typified by Enoch being taken up), the seven-year tribulation period begins. There will be world-wide destruction under the one world government led by the antichrist.

Seven and ten are numbers of completion. After a complete period of time, one man, Enoch, was removed from the earth alive and taken into heaven, and after another complete period of time, one man and his family, Noah, remaining on the earth, were kept safely through a worldwide destruction caused by a flood.

Enoch means *dedicate* and is derived from a Hebrew word meaning *to discipline, to train up*.

Noah is the Hebrew word for *rest*. It points to the Seventh Day Sabbath rest, which will follow that pictured through the flood, the tribulation.

In our Genesis Part 3 study, we will continue to do a detailed study of Genesis 5.

Until then, I pray you will continue to study His Word and Seek First His Kingdom and His Righteousness.

2Peter 1:19

19 And so we have the prophetic word confirmed, which you do well to heed as a light that shines in a dark place, until the day dawns and the morning star rises in your hearts;

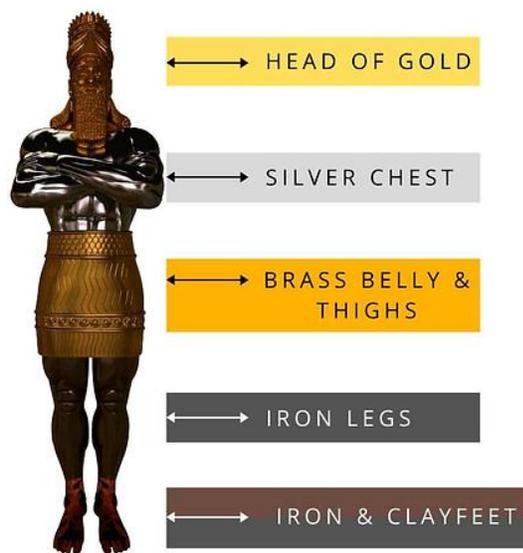
The Great Image in Daniel 2:

Head of Gold represents the Babylonian Kingdom

Silver chest represents the Mede Persians

Brass/Bronze Belly and thighs represents the Grecian Empire

Iron legs and feet of clay and iron represents Antichrist's Kingdom

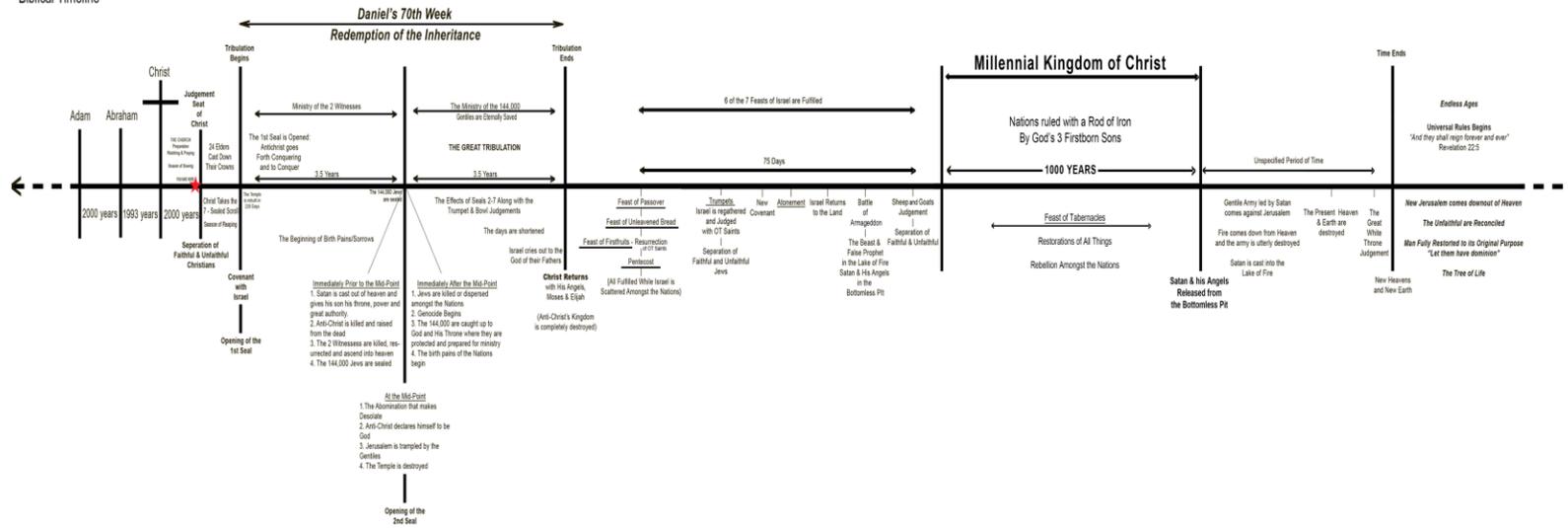


THE KINGDOMS OF THIS WORLD

“The KINGDOMS of this world have become the kingdoms of our Lord and of His Christ, and He shall reign forever and ever!” (Revelation 11:15)

| <i>KINGDOMS:</i> | <i>Daniel Ch.2</i> | <i>Daniel Ch.4</i> | <i>Daniel Ch.7</i> | <i>Daniel Ch.8</i> | <i>Hosea 13:7-8</i> | <i>Amos 5:18-20</i> | <i>Revelation 13:1-2</i> |
|---|--|---------------------------------|--------------------------------------|---|---------------------|------------------------|---|
| BABYLON <i>(Including Assyria)</i> | Head Of Gold | Tree cut down. Beastly Grazing. | Lion | | Lion | Lion | Mouth Of Lion |
| MEDO-PERSIAN | Chest/Arms of Silver | | Bear | Ram w. 2 horns. 2 nd is larger | Bear | Bear | Bear’s feet |
| GRECIAN | Belly Of Bronze | | Leopard | Male Goat 1 + 4 Horns | Leopard | Went into the House | Leopard |
| ANTI-CHRIST | Legs of Iron Feet of Iron & Clay | | Terrible Beast | Small Horn grows GREAT | Wild Beast | Serpent Bites | Beast from sea w. 7 heads & 10 crowns. Dragon |
| CHRIST’S MILLENNIAL REIGN <i>(1000 Years)</i> | Stone cut out of Mountain strikes the image at its feet & destroys the whole image | | Court seated. Ancient of Days | | | DAY Of The LORD | |

From Here to Eternity Biblical Timeline



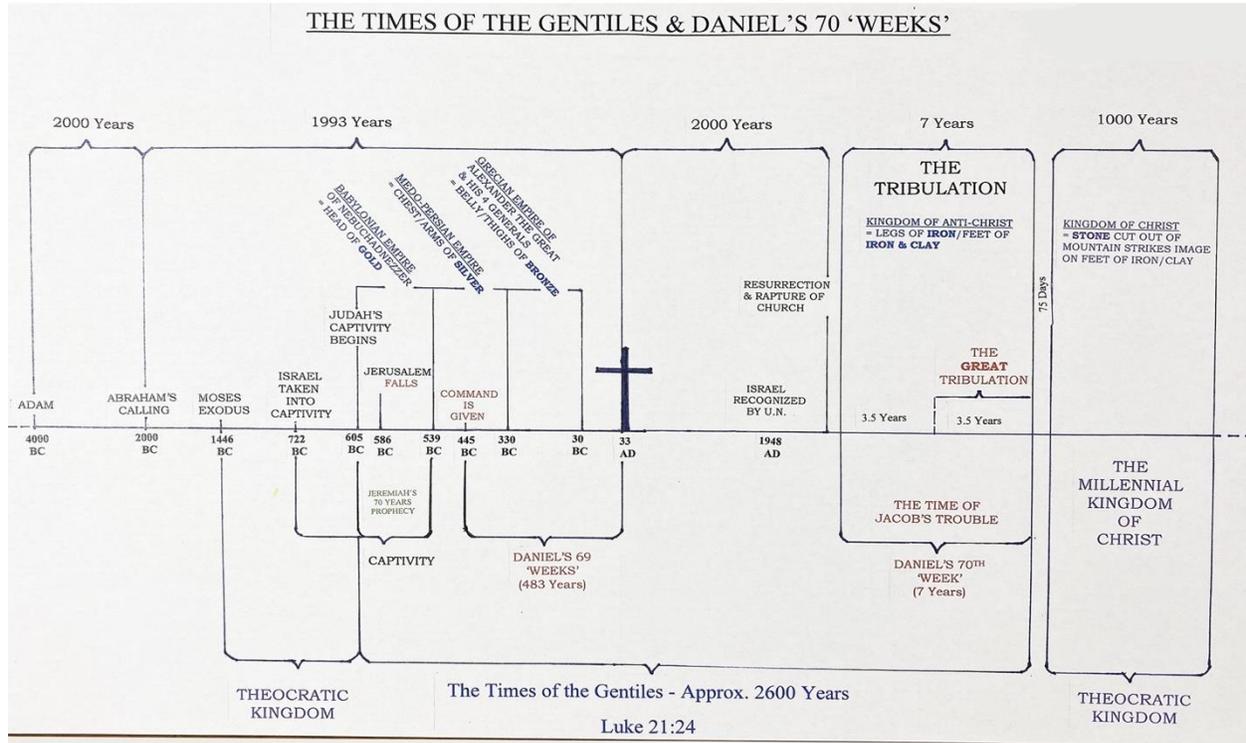


Chart produced by Ann Herbert

Key points from Genesis Part 2

- **In Lesson 2, we learned that *The LORD God had not caused it to rain on the earth, and there was no man to till the ground.***

And we learned that *a mist [vapor] went up from the earth and watered the whole face of the ground.* Gen. 2:4-7

We discussed the significance of rain in Scripture and that Man was formed or fashioned from the dust of the **restored** earth.

After fashioning the man from the dust, God breathed into his nostrils the breath or **Spirit** of God.

And we learned that just as God breathed into Adam's nostrils the breath (or **Spirit**) of God, so all of Scripture is God breathed (having God's inspiration).

2 Timothy 3:16-17.

John 6:63

63 "It is the Spirit who gives life; the flesh profits nothing. The words that I speak to you are spirit, and they are life.

God's Word then is what gives us spiritual life and life in the age to come. It is our only source of truth.

Rain was seen as a blessing in Scripture as it brings forth fruit and new birth. Lack of rain or drought conditions points to judgment. And water is a picture of the Word of God (Eph. 5:25,26; Psalm 63:1).

- **In Lesson 3, we learned that the tree of life is first seen in the Garden of Eden in connection with the purpose for Man's creation, rulership. This tree is also mentioned in Rev. 2:7 as one of the overcomer's promises given to those who will fulfill God's purpose for Man and will rule with Christ in the Kingdom Age.**

We examined the four riverbeds (from one river) and the relationship to rulership:

Pison – This riverbed encircled the land of Havilah and in the land of Havilah we see gems present in rulership of eternity past (Ezek. 28:13) and eternity future (Revelation 21:10-11, 19-23).

Key points from Genesis Part 2

Gihon - which means *bursting forth*. This is the name of the spring near Jerusalem where the anointing and proclaiming of Solomon as King took place (1Kings 1:45). (And King Solomon is a type of Christ ruling in His glorious Millennial Kingdom!)

Tigris – rulership regarding Israel is seen in view as Daniel received and understood the message from the Lord, as he sat *by the side of the great river, that is, the Tigris*.

Euphrates - means **fruitfulness**. a boundary for the promised land of Canaan that would be given to Israel, to rule, *as an everlasting possession*.

Even the word *river* in Scripture, often points to fruit bearing and rulership. And this is no surprise, as all of Scripture moves to that Seventh Day out ahead, when rulership will change.

And lastly, we read that *LORD God took the man and put him in the garden of Eden to tend [work or serve] and keep it*. The word *keep* means to *guard, preserve, protect as a watchman*. Adam was placed in a position to guard and protect the restored earth and rule over God's creation. Eden means *pleasure* and *garden* is the same word referred to as *paradise* in Scripture.

The Man and the Woman were created to rule over (guard, protect) the newly restored earth in the place of its' present ruler, Satan.

- **In Lesson 4 we saw that the Passover lamb is a type of Christ (1Corinthians 5:7).**

He is the sinless lamb without blemish as described in 1Peter 1:18,19. And according to Exodus 12: 5, 46, the Passover lamb was not to have a bone broken.

John 19:32-34; 36-37

32 Then the soldiers came and broke the legs of the first and of the other who was crucified with Him. 33 But when they came to Jesus and saw that He was already dead, they did not break His legs. 34 But one of the soldiers pierced His side with a spear, and immediately blood and water came out. 36 For these things were done that the Scripture should be fulfilled, "Not one of His bones shall be broken." 37 And again another Scripture says, "They shall look on Him whom they pierced."

We reviewed Adam and the Woman as a type of Christ and His Bride (Rom. 5:14b). In Gen. 2:21-25, man (male and female), was created in God's image,

Key points from Genesis Part 2

after God's likeness. They were created to have dominion over the restored creation.

God determined that it was not good for the Man to be alone, and He made a helper comparable to have co-dominion with Adam. The word *made* in Genesis 2:22 means "to build". God determined that it was not good for His Son, the last Adam, to be alone and He is presently in the process of building a helper comparable to co-reign with the Son in His future Millennial Kingdom!

The Bride of Christ will consist of Christians that are ready, prepared to meet the Lord. They have been washed in His blood and cleansed in the water of His Word. They have followed His Word in faithful obedience, which are the righteous acts of the Christian that allows that Christian ***to be arrayed in fine linen, clean and bright.***

And it is Christ and His Bride who will co-reign as one in His Kingdom out ahead. And we briefly reviewed types and antitypes in Scripture.

- **In Lesson 5 we learned about the serpent in eternity past, where he ruled as the anointed cherub. Angelic beings were created to rule in eternity past and Scripture is silent regarding how long this period of time existed. After Lucifer's rebellion, God restored the earth and the sanctuaries associated with it and Adam and the woman were created to rule over God's restored creation.**

And we learned that Satan planted the seed of doubt in the woman's mind by questioning God's Word, the only source of truth – *Has God indeed said, 'You shall not eat of every tree of the garden'?*

In Gen. 3:4, we saw the serpent calling God a liar and inferring that God is hindering the woman from becoming a god –
Then the serpent said to the woman, "You will not surely die. 5 "For God knows that in the day you eat of it your eyes will be opened, and you will be like God, knowing good and evil.

And we know that God is Truth and that He has provided everything for man to be like His Son in that coming Day – *"To him who overcomes I will grant to*

Key points from Genesis Part 2

sit with Me on My throne, as I also overcame and sat down with My Father on His throne.” Rev 3:21

Satan is the father of lies and he is continually and strategically using the same modus operandi – lies and deception - to prevent Christ and His firstborn Sons from ruling in that Day, the Seventh Day Sabbath Rest out ahead. Rulership from the heavens over the earth is what is at stake.

The serpent continues to place obstacles into the entrance of Christ’s heavenly kingdom.

Satan silences the message of rulership in Christ’s Kingdom out ahead. He distorts, dilutes, and *snatches* the Word of the Kingdom as pictured in the parable of the sower (Mat.13:3-23).

In Mat. 13:19 we read *“When anyone hears **the word of the kingdom**, and does not understand it, then the wicked one comes and snatches [seizes] away what was sown in his heart. This is he who received seed by the wayside.*

We learned the importance of understanding the Word of God. Rightly dividing God’s Word will give us a correct understanding.

According to Prov. 4:5, **understanding**, regarding this message, is given by **remembering** (*do not forget*) what God’s Word says concerning Christ’s return as King of Kings and rulership in that Day!

And finally, we learned that according to Proverbs 4:7, we *get understanding* by not turning away from the Lord’s words. As we have learned in our Gen. Part 1 study, the Word of His coming Kingdom is given in the first thirty-four verses of Genesis. This message is the main theme of Scripture. All of Scripture moves toward that Seventh Day, the Sabbath Day, the rest out ahead when Christ will restore all things, praise God! We should not drift away (turn away) or walk away from this truth.

- **In Lesson 6, we learned that after Adam and the woman sinned and ate from the tree of the knowledge of good and evil, they were separated from God’s purpose for them which was rulership (dominion) over His restored creation. And so, the pristine covering of glory, the garment of light, the precursor to being**

Key points from Genesis Part 2

clothed with honor and majesty, was gone and they were totally naked.

Once they realized what they had lost, they attempted to cover themselves with fig leaves. Man's attempts of working toward spiritual redemption always fail and with the loss of the glory covering, fig leaves could not atone for their sin or cover their shame. And so, they hid themselves from the Lord (which is also futile exercise).

Adam was not deceived. He **willingly** partook of the tree of the knowledge of good and evil following Eve partaking of this tree (1 Timothy 2:14).

Adam is a *type of Him who was to come*, Christ. When Christ (who *knew no sin*, was made *sin for us*) first found His potential bride, she was in the same condition in which Adam found the woman!

After the woman had eaten of the forbidden fruit, she was no longer able to rule with Adam and Adam was unable to rule apart from the woman. Adam knew, because of that which God had said, that without his wife he was unable to rule, and without her husband she was unable to be redeemed, as they were one flesh, and it was not good for the man to be alone – Gen. 2:23.

Adam, however, through the Woman's deception, became disqualified to rule before ever taking the scepter of rulership, leaving the incumbent, Satan, as the 'ruler of this world'. Consequently, Adam could not have fulfilled the purpose for his creation had he not acted just as he did.

Adam acted with a view to **the Woman's redemption**, in order that he, as a complete being (Adam, with Eve), might one day fulfill the purpose for man's creation.

And neither can Christ, the second Man, the last Adam, rule apart from a wife. He, *Who knew no sin was made sin for us*, with a view to both Christ and a **redeemed wife** one day taking the scepter and ascending the throne together.

After their fall, Adam and the woman *heard the sound of God walking in the garden*. The word *sound* is from an unused root meaning *to call aloud; a voice or sound; God's voice or thunderings*.

We learned that in Old Testament Scripture, to walk on land symbolized that an individual possessed that land or had authority over the land they walked on.

Key points from Genesis Part 2

In Gen. 3:8 we read *they heard the sound of the LORD God walking in the garden in the cool of the day.*

The word **cool** is the Hebrew word *ruah* which means *Spirit, wind, breath*. It is the same word used in Gen. 1:2.

After judgment comes restoration. God was walking in the Spirit (cool) of the day. As we studied in Gen. part 1, God's Spirit begins the process of restoration (Gen. 2:2). The Lord, being omniscient, already knew that Adam and the woman had sinned, and God's Spirit would begin the process of restoring them.

God was walking in the Spirit (cool) of **the day**. Perhaps we may also see that the phrase *Spirit of the day* points to a time yet future, the times of refreshing in that **Day**, the Sabbath Day out ahead, when God will restore all things.

- **In Lesson 7, we learned that Adam was afraid when he heard the voice of God in the garden because Adam and the woman lost their glory covering and they were naked (*utterly naked and helpless*).**

After the fall of Man in the Garden of Eden, sin affected all three parts of their being:

- Their human spirit died, and they were separated from God.
- Their soul became corrupted with a sinful nature. The soul now knew not only good but evil too.
- Their body lost the glory covering and so they could not be clothed in garments of splendor and majesty for rulership. Their bodies also started to physically die.

God initially created Man in His image for the purpose of rulership. Salvation is given as the only means by which Man can be placed back in a position to fulfill his created position, which is rulership in God's image (Gen.1:26).

God's provision for salvation provides salvation for all three parts of man-spirit, soul, *and* body (I Thess. 5:23).

We studied the different Greek words used for spirit, soul, and body:

- **The word for *spirit* in the New Testament is the Greek word *pneuma* or breath.**
- **The word for *soul* is *psuche*. It is often translated as life or heart and is the vital force that keeps us alive. It is the place of our feelings, desires, affections, and aversions. (*Psych* in psychology originates from this word.)**
- **The word *body* is a translation of *sōma*. It means the physical body.**

And we examined the salvation of the Spirit, soul, and body.

- **The word for *spirit* in the New Testament is the Greek word *pneuma* or breath.**

Key points from Genesis Part 2

- The word for *soul* is *psuche*. It is often translated as life or heart and is the vital force that keeps us alive. It is the place of our feelings, desires, affections, and aversions. (*Psych* in psychology originates from this word.)
- The word *body* is a translation of *sōma*. It means the physical body.

The **past aspect of salvation** refers to salvation with respect to our spirit and is a result of our putting faith in Jesus, fully apart from our own works. It is a free gift.

The **present aspect of our salvation** deals with the salvation of our corrupted soul. This salvation is an ongoing process, a present continuing action as we deny ourselves, take up our cross and follow Christ in our journey of life. Salvation of the soul always involves works as it is not a free gift.

Philippians 2:12

12 Therefore, my beloved, as you have always obeyed, not as in my presence only, but now much more in my absence, work out your own salvation with fear and trembling.

The **future aspect of our salvation** speaks of the redemption of our bodies, after being found faithful at the Judgment Seat of Christ. It involves receiving the glory covering as seen in Adam and the woman before the fall,

(Please refer to the Restoration Circle diagram for further review.)

In Gen. 3:13, the woman admits that she was deceived by the serpent Satan, and she disobeyed. And so, the man and the woman lost their potential position of rulership. Satan is the father of lies and he is continually and strategically using the same modus operandi – lies and deception - to prevent Christ and His firstborn Sons from ruling in that Day, the Seventh Day Sabbath Rest out ahead. Rulership from the heavens over the earth is what is at stake.

The serpent continues to place obstacles into the entrance of Christ's heavenly kingdom.

- **In Lesson 8, we examined the spiritual significance of the woman's Seed crushing the head of the seed of the serpent in Gen.3:15.**

And despite Satan's attempts to corrupt the bloodline of the Seed of the woman, the Lord will be victorious, and Christ's Kingdom will come.

At the cross, the heel of God's Son was bruised while Satan's head (headship, rulership) was crushed. This refers to Satan's headship with regards to the rulership of the Kingdom. In that Day, the Seventh Day Sabbath Rest out ahead, Satan's crown will be removed and given to the Seed of the Woman, Christ! This is the conclusion of the enmity between the seed of the serpent and the Seed of the Woman. The Lord's will, **will be done and His Kingdom will come in that Day.**

Key points from Genesis Part 2

Matthew 6:9-10

9 "In this manner, therefore, pray: Our Father in heaven, Hallowed be Your name. 10 Your kingdom come. Your will be done On earth as it is in heaven.

We reviewed examples in Scripture where the serpent and his seed attempted to destroy the Seed of the Woman. Pharoah, Haman, King Balak and King Herod were some of the examples.

- **In Lesson 9, we reviewed Gen. 3: 16 –**

To the woman He said: "I will greatly multiply your sorrow and your conception; In pain you shall bring forth children; Your desire shall be for your husband, And he shall rule over you."

We saw that our desire should be for our husband. We are to honor the marriage covenant and be under the headship of our husband, as God does indeed work through the husband first in a marriage. We examined the spiritual significance of this passage in comparison to Eph. 5.

In Gen. 2:16, the phrase *Your desire shall be for your husband, And he shall rule over you*, points to another marriage relationship in the age to come, in the Millennial Reign of Christ. Not only should our desire be for our husband in this age but also for our Bridegroom Jesus Christ, in the age to come, as the Woman - Adam's wife - also forms a type of those who will be Christ's Bride.

We also learned that not only was God's creation Man (the Man and the Woman), in a ruined state, but the newly restored earth over which the Man and the Woman were to rule together was also ruined. The earth will be restored in Christ's Kingdom (Rom. 8:19).

God said *In toil [sorrow; labor] you shall eat of it All the days of your life*. Man would have to work to till the ground and yield food. And man must work to receive their spiritual food also. Studying the Scriptures and rightly dividing His Word is hard work but it is God's heavenly manna, the Word of God, that sustains us spiritually.

We studied the spiritual significance of thorns and thistles (John 19:2; 2 Corinth. 5:21; Isa. Isa. 32:12-15).

In Gen. 3:18 we read *In the sweat of your face you shall eat bread*. The word *sweat* in Gen. 3:18 is mentioned only once in Scripture. It comes from the root word *tremble, quiver, be in terror*.

And finally, we learned that Eve means *living*. Adam responds to the promise of the seed of the woman (Gen. 3:15) by naming his wife appropriately. It is an act of faith for him to say, in essence, "indeed, my wife will be the mother of the living."

Key points from Genesis Part 2

- **In Lesson 10, we learned that God always requires a substitute death and shed blood for the salvation of fallen man and this principle was set in Gen. 3:21.**

Jesus, our Passover Lamb, has died on the cross and shed His blood on the cross for our sins. In order for fallen man to be saved, God requires that man should believe in the Provision (the substitute death and shed blood Provision) which God gave – His Son Jesus.

Jesus, the Seed of the Woman, is the Lamb of God. He is the *substitute death and shed blood* provision that has taken away the sins of the world!

We also saw that death and shed blood was required for the atonement of sins for God's people, Israel. Throughout Scripture, we see that it is the substitute death and shed blood that provided redemption for Adam and Eve, for Israel and for the Church. It is our faith in the death and shed blood of Jesus as our Passover Lamb that gives us spiritual redemption. And it is the blood from His side at calvary that cleanses a believer after they sin. How precious is His blood –

1Peter 1:18-19

18 knowing that you were not redeemed with corruptible things, like silver or gold, from your aimless conduct received by tradition from your fathers, 19 but with the precious blood of Christ, as of a lamb without blemish and without spot.

We also examined the spiritual significance of the articles within the temple and beyond the veil, in the Holy of Holies.

If we follow the pattern set in the Temple of God, we will be in the presence of the Lord and commune with the Lord, in an intimate way, in this age and in the age to come in His Kingdom, as His Bride –

- **Present our bodies as a living sacrifice upon the altar, crucifying our flesh. Romans 12:1**
- **Wash ourselves at the bronze laver by confessing our sins to our High Priest Jesus and being washed in His Word. 1John 1:9; Eph. 5:26**
- **After these actions, then we can enter the Holy Place within the temple where the incense, our prayers will be**

Key points from Genesis Part 2

heard. And we will be in His Light given by the candelabra and eat of the shewbread, His Words that sustain us spiritually and allows us to mature spiritually. 1John 1:7; John 8:12, 8:48, 6:48; Rev. 8:4

- **After these actions, we can precede beyond the veil, into the Holy of Holies, where God communes with His people and where His glory resides. This Holy of Holies also pictures His glorious heavenly Kingdom out ahead, where we can be in that Day, should we be found faithful. And we will hear the Lord say, *I will meet with you, and I will speak with you from above the mercy seat, from between the two cherubim which are on the ark of the...*” Heb. 6:19, 20; Exo. 25:20-22**

In Lesson 11, we saw that Cain is a type of Israel that slew the Jewish brother, Jesus. And we learned that Abel’s sacrifice was accepted while Cain’s sacrifice was not. Cain’s envy toward his brother was a picture of the nation of Israel, whose attempts to keep the Law were never acceptable to the Lord, and they too were jealous of their brother, Jesus.

Cain was a tiller of the ground, a man of the earth, whereas Abel was a keeper of the sheep. And Jesus is our Good Shepherd. Abel, whose sacrifice of lambs from the flock was acceptable to God, pictures the Lord Jesus, who would Himself be the accepted sacrifice as the Lamb of God. In contrast, Cain, whose sacrifice was not accepted, pictures Israel, whose attempts to keep the letter of the law were never acceptable to the Lord and they were jealous of their brother.

When Cain and Abel were in the field together, Cain rose up and killed his brother Abel and when the nation of Israel and the Lord were in the land of Israel together, so Israel rose up and killed his brother, the Lord Jesus.

Through the death of Abel at the hands of Cain, we can see that the seed of the serpent (who is the ruler of this age), sought to stop *the Seed of the Woman* from fulfilling that which God had said in Gen. 3:15!

Key points from Genesis Part 2

We examined the spiritual significance of the articles within the Tabernacle for Israel – Aaron’s budding Rod and the cherubim guarding the access to God. And we learned in Ezekiel that the cherubim also carried the glory of God away from the temple after the theocracy for Israel ended. We related this to the cherubim guarding the access to the Garden of Eden and the Tree of Life, after Adam and Eve fell and were driven out from the Garden. And the flaming sword seen in Gen. 3:24 represented the Word of God (Eph. 6:17; Heb. 4:12).

- **In Lesson 12, we learned that the *LORD set a mark on Cain, lest anyone finding him should kill him.***

The word *mark* means *sign* and God placed a *sign or mark* of protection on Cain. Cain being a type of Israel, will rule in that Seventh Day Sabbath rest out ahead.

We examined the Sabbath as a sign pointing to that future Day of Rest during Christ’s Millennial Reign.

In Gen. 4:15 we read that *Cain went out from the presence of the LORD and dwelt in the land of Nod on the east of Eden.*

To go out from the presence of the Lord was a significant punishment for Cain. He dwelt in the land of Nod. The word Nod means *vagrancy, wandering*. It was east of the Eden, the garden of pleasure.

And as Cain forms a type of Israel, because of Israel’s disobedience, the nation was scattered out amongst the gentile nations. The Times of the Gentiles began in 605 B.C. when Israel was removed from the land under Babylonian captivity. Israel was in the land at Christ’s first coming, yet the land was under gentile Roman rulership. They were again completely scattered amongst the Gentile nations in A.D. 70.

- **In Lesson 13, we learned that Enoch had a son (great grandson) named Lamech. Lamech, whose name means *powerful*, misused the arms which his sons invented. It appears that he was a proud and boastful individual with little remorse for his actions.**

Lamech knew that his vengeful actions in murdering Enoch would have spawned an avenger. And, as has also been noted, Lamech was a man of great pride. His ego, in relation to his own death at the hands of an avenger, would have, in turn, demanded that the act of avenging him to be great — greater than even his ancestor, Cain; seventy-sevenfold greater. **Seventy-sevenfold means seventy times seven** (as seen in Matt.18:22).

Cain’s avenger is avenged seven times –

Key points from Genesis Part 2

And the LORD said to him, "Therefore, whoever kills Cain, vengeance shall be taken on him sevenfold." And the LORD set a mark on Cain, lest anyone finding him should kill him. Gen. 4:15

Cain is a type of Israel. Lamech is also a type of Israel but Israel in a time yet future, the tribulation period, the Seventh Week of Daniel. And at that time, the Gentile nations that come against Israel, and try to "kill" or exterminate Israel, will be **avenged not sevenfold but seventy-sevenfold**.

We reviewed the judgments seen on the earth during the tribulation, and the judgments against the Gentiles nations that come against Israel. We reviewed a summary of these judgments according to Rev. 6-19.

We compared the future judgment against these Gentile nations to the type seen in God's judgment against Egypt in the book of Exodus.

We studied the four kingdoms in the book of Daniel, all which have their seat of governance in Babylon. The fourth kingdom represents the antichrist's kingdom.

Cain's descendants are mentioned only to the seventh generation in Gen. 4. Cain's line did not survive after the flood of Noah's day. Only the line of Seth alone survived the flood.

Seth means *compensation*. The root word of Seth means *to set, appoint, put in order*. *God has appointed another seed, instead of Abel*. Remember, according to Gen. 3:15, God said –

And I will put enmity Between you and the woman, And between your seed and her Seed; He shall bruise your head, And you shall bruise His heel."

And God's promises to send the Redeemer, the Seed of the Woman, would be realized through the bloodline of Seth, not Cain.

- **Seth had a son named Enosh which means *man*. According to Gen. 5:11, Enosh lived for 905 years! We read that *then men began to call on the name of the LORD*. The word *then* implies that men began *to call on the name of the LORD* after the birth of Enosh.**

The word *call* means to *call, cry out, recite, read, proclaim*. The phrase *on the name* means *to name*. It comes from the root word *śûm*, meaning to *appoint, set or make for a sign*. The word *LORD* means *Jehovah* and was the name of the One True God of the Hebrews.

Key points from Genesis Part 2

Perhaps v.26 is implying that at the time of Enosh's birth, men began to cry out to the Lord and call on the name of the Lord, the Appointed One, the Seed of the Woman. They would associate themselves or call themselves *by the name of the Lord*.

And they trusted in the promises of God to send a Redeemer. Through the bloodline of Seth and Enos, would come Noah. And through Noah's son Shem, would come Abraham and his descendants, the nation of Israel. And *the LORD, Jehovah* would be the God of Israel.

And it is only through Israel, under Jehovah God, that salvation would come.

Psalm 3:8

8 Salvation belongs to the LORD. Your blessing is upon Your people. Selah

Israel would come the oracles of God and the incarnate Word of God, Jesus Christ, who is the Seed of the Woman and the Redeemer!

One last but important point regarding Seth. A third son is born who replaced Abel, the son God had accepted. As Abel pictures Christ in death, so Seth pictures Christ in resurrection. Of the 2 sons of Adam alive at this time, it is only Seth who has a God and only Seth through whom God will work. As we previously read, through Seth would come the *Seed of the Woman, the Resurrection, and the Life*. Seth then pictures the resurrected Christ (John 11:25).

Key points from Genesis Part 2

Thank you

Thank you, Abba Father, for sending your Son, Jesus Christ, the Redeemer of the world.

Thank you for creating man for the purpose of ruling with your Son as a joint heir in Christ's Heavenly Kingdom.

Thank you for being a God of love, mercy, patience and faithfulness.

Thank you for sending wonderful teachers that have correctly divided your Word and who are faithful to teach this most important message regarding your Son's Heavenly Kingdom. And their motivation in doing this is their love for the brethren.

Thank you

Pastor John Herbert for your in-depth sermons and your sincere love for the flock.

Cindy Zeigler and Ann Herbert, my editors and chiefs, that kept me focused. I am so grateful for their excellent teaching.

Arlen Chitwood, author of many books which have enriched the understanding of God's Kingdom for so many.

I encourage you to continue Seeking First His Kingdom and His Righteousness by visiting the websites below. Studying any of the material available on these websites will certainly be fruit-bearing for you as you continue in your race of faith.

<https://cornerstonejacksonville.com>

<http://www.lampbroadcast.org>

Appendix

| | |
|--|-----|
| Helpful Notes for Studying God's Word. | 339 |
| Olam, Aion, Aionios | 343 |
| Diagram of the Tabernacle in the Wilderness | 347 |
| Meteorological Conditions Prior to the flood of Noah | 349 |
| Seven Day Timeline | 351 |
| Restoration Circle Diagram | 353 |
| From Here to Eternity Biblical Timeline | 355 |
| The Kingdoms of This World in Daniel | 357 |
| The Kingdom of God | 359 |
| Gift/Prize Tract | 363 |
| Parable of the Vinedresser | 365 |
| Types and Antitypes in Scripture | 371 |
| Jesus in Revelation and Daniel | 383 |
| Daniel's Seventy Weeks | 385 |
| Seven Sevens and Seventy Times Seven | 387 |
| Seventy Sevens -Seventy Weeks of Daniel | 391 |

APPENDIX

APPENDIX

Helpful notes for studying God's Word

All Scripture is God breathed, God's inspiration.

2Timothy 3:16-17

16 All Scripture is given by inspiration of God, and is profitable for doctrine, for reproof, for correction, for instruction in righteousness, 17 that the man of God may be complete, thoroughly equipped for every good work.

The phrase *inspiration of God* means God breathed, inspired by God. (It comes from the Greek word *theopneustos* with *theo* meaning God and *pneustos* meaning *breathe*. Interestingly, this phrase only occurs one time in Scripture.)

God's Word then is what gives us spiritual life and life in the age to come. It is our only source of truth. It is our spiritual nourishment, and it equips us to be complete, perfect.

Since this Book is so valuable, spending hours in the Word of God each day is time well spent. And it is important to rightly divide His Word as you diligently seek Him in His Word.

Study His Word in the context of the chapter (using at least ten verses before and ten verses after a passage), comparing Scripture with Scripture. And consider the text within the larger context, even beyond the chapter and book the passage is in.

When studying a passage or topic within Scripture, it is important to build upon the seven-day foundation given in the first thirty-four verses of Genesis. (That is why having a correct understanding of the first thirty-four verses in Genesis is so important.)

Ask and answer questions from the passage you are studying.

For example, in John 1:1-5 we read –

APPENDIX

1 In the beginning was the Word, and the Word was with God, and the Word was God. 2 He was in the beginning with God. 3 All things were made through Him, and without Him nothing was made that was made. 4 In Him was life, and the life was the light of men. 5 And the light shines in the darkness, and the darkness did not comprehend it.

You might ask and answer the question, what was the Word in v.1?

How were all things made according to v.3?

What was the life of men according to v. 4?

What is darkness unable to comprehend according to v. 5 and what does comprehend mean in the original Greek language?

If you do a word search on the word *comprehend* you will see that this word means *overtake, seize upon*. In v.5 then, the phrase *the darkness did not comprehend it* means that the darkness cannot overtake the Light.

In this study, we will see that God uses types/antitypes in order for us to understand and rightly divide His Word.

A type can be a person, place, thing or institution, which points to something beyond itself. The antitype is the fulfillment of that type.

We will be discussing this in greater detail in our study but here is an example of types/antitypes –

Romans 5:14

14 Nevertheless death reigned from Adam to Moses, even over those who had not sinned according to the likeness of the transgression of Adam, who is a type of Him who was to come.

1Corinthians 15:45, 47

45 And so it is written, "The first man Adam became a living being." The last Adam became a life-giving spirit. ... 47 The first man was of the earth, made of dust; the second Man is the Lord from heaven.

In these passages we can see that Adam was a type of Jesus. Types/antitypes are given throughout Scripture. In this study we will see that Isaac is a type of

APPENDIX

Christ, Joseph is a type of Christ, the articles within the Holy Place of the temple are a type of Christ. Types/antitypes are *treasures* given by God to help us come into a greater understanding of His Word and His plans and purposes for man.

If you do not understand a passage in Scripture, pray and ask the Holy Spirit to guide you into the correct understanding of His Word –

John 16:13

*13 "However, when He, the Spirit of truth, has come, **He will guide you into all truth**; for He will not speak on His own authority, but whatever He hears He will speak; and He will tell you things to come.*

Keep asking, keep seeking, keep knocking and He will show you all truth –

Matthew 7:7-8

7 "Ask, and it will be given to you; seek, and you will find; knock, and it will be opened to you. 8 "For everyone who asks receives, and he who seeks finds, and to him who knocks it will be opened.

And most importantly, our faith comes by hearing the Word of God and it continues to mature as we study it and faithfully obey it –

Romans 10:17

17 So then faith comes by hearing, and hearing by the word of God.

My prayer is that this study will give you a greater desire and understanding to *seek first the kingdom of God and His righteousness, **Matthew 6:33***

Good Bible resources, which are free, are the Olive Tree app and the Blue Letter Bible (on internet). Both have the root words and concordance and lexical aids for Scripture, which are helpful in correctly understanding His Word.

(Example: Bethlehem means house of Bread and Jesus was born in Bethlehem. He is the Bread of life, and He is the incarnate Word, the heavenly manna.)

APPENDIX

I use the Hebrew Greek Key Study Bible in the New King James version (AMG publishers/Spiros Zodhiates). This Bible has the concordance, lexical aids and the Hebrew and Chaldee Dictionary within it.

(If using Zoom, make sure you have your strongest WIFI/internet connection set up. Have video camera enabled unless you have a poor signal with your WIFI. If that is the case, just have the audio enabled and you should still be able to hear the Bible study and participate.

Please keep your microphones muted. This way we will not get any feedback noise. When you are ready to answer a question, make a comment, read scripture, or pray, please just unmute your microphone.

Please feel free to ask questions but to ensure that we finish each Bible Lesson, please write, and save your questions and we can go over them at the end of the lesson.)

Proverbs 2:1-5, 9-11

1 My son, if you receive my words, And treasure my commands within you, 2 So that you incline your ear to wisdom, And apply your heart to understanding; 3 Yes, if you cry out for discernment, And lift up your voice for understanding, 4 If you seek her as silver, And search for her as for hidden treasures; 5 Then you will understand the fear of the LORD, And find the knowledge of God. ... 9 Then you will understand righteousness and justice, Equity and every good path. 10 When wisdom enters your heart, And knowledge is pleasant to your soul, 11 Discretion will preserve you; Understanding will keep you,

Romans 15:4

4 For whatever things were written before were written for our learning, that we through the patience and comfort of the Scriptures might have hope.

APPENDIX

Olam, Aion, Aionios

Since the whole of Scripture in both Testaments deals with events during “time” (six and seven thousand years of time [6,000 years of restorative work, followed by a 1,000-year day of rest]) *WHY* does practically the whole of Christendom read and see Scripture dealing with events during “time” (present) in relation to “eternity” (future)?

And, in a respect, that is a rather easy question to answer, though, at the same time, it is a very difficult question to deal with.

The simple answer is threefold:

- 1) Problems with the English translation, mainly with three words — *olam* (O.T.) *aion, aionios* (N.T.).
- 2) How individuals understand Gen. 1:1-2:3 and John 1:1-2:11 and the relationship these sections have to all subsequent Scripture.
- 3) The resulting central message *seen throughout ALL Scripture*.

Olam is the main Hebrew word translated “eternal” throughout the Old Testament, and *aion* or *aionios* (the adjective form of *aion*) are the two Greek words translated “eternal” throughout the New Testament.

Each Testament Begins and Continues the Same Way 7

Question: *HOW* can the superstructure deal with “eternity” when the foundation deals *ONLY* with “time,” limited to seven thousand years?

And the answer is quite simple:

It CAN'T!

The foundation, so to speak, *is the SET standard*. And “time” in the superstructure *MUST remain in COMPLETE keeping with “time” in the foundation, the SET standard*.

The matter is similar to the relationship between the timepiece in Greenwich and the celestial chronometer.

The timepiece in Greenwich *is ALWAYS set by the un-changeable, celestial chronometer, NEVER the other way around*. And, in like manner, that which follows Gen. 1:1-2:3 and John 1:1-2:11 *MUST ALWAYS remain in complete accord with that SET in these foundational passages, the SET, unchangeable*

standard.

- 1) *No Word for “eternal”*

APPENDIX

Something little understood is the fact that *NEITHER* the Hebrew text of the Old Testament *NOR* the Greek text of the New Testament has a word for “eternal.”

Olam in the Hebrew text of the Old Testament is the main word translated “eternal.” This word has to do, *NOT* with “eternity,” *BUT* with “a long period of time,” which would be “time” related to the subject at hand.

And though the word is used of God numerous times, it would still relate, first and foremost, to time in the foundational structure. True, God transcends “time,” *BUT*, it would also be true that Scripture deals with events during “time,” *NOT* during “eternity.”

Aion and *aionios* in the Greek text of the New Testament are associated with “time” the same way that *olam* is associated with “time” in the Hebrew text of the Old Testament.

BIBLICAL SUBJECT AND STRUCTURE

(For a comprehensive understanding of the way *aion* and *aionios* are used in the Greek text of the New Testament, refer to the article, “Aion, Aionios,” on the author’s web site.

The contents of this article were taken from Marvin R. Vincent’s *Word Studies in the New Testament* [a widely recognized four-volume Greek word study, edited over one hundred years ago, still a standard work today].)

The Greek philosophers, preceding the writing of the New Testament, used *aion* to reference “time,” *NOT* “eternity,” with *aionios* used in their later writings after the same fashion.

And this is the type usage and understanding of these two words that continued through the time that the New Testament was written.

And, as well, this would be in complete keeping with that seen in the foundational material beginning each Testament. Understanding the use of *olam*, *aion*, or *aionios* as “eternal” — at any point from Moses to John — would *NOT ONLY* be out of line with this foundational material *BUT ALSO* with an understanding of *HOW* these words were understood and used at the time Scripture was written.

Thus, the understanding and use of *olam* throughout the approximately one-thousand-year period during which the Old Testament was written (abt. 1,400 to 400 B.C.) and of *aion* and *aionios* during the first century when the New Testament was written (during and shortly beyond the Acts period) would be in complete keeping with the thought of “time,” *NOT* “eternity,” as set forth in the foundational data beginning both Testaments.

In short, *it would be IMPOSSIBLE* to understand any one of these three words as “eternal” throughout this time and, at the same time, *remain in COMPLETE KEEPING with the foundational material*.

And *exactly* when and how *olam*, *aion*, and *aionios* subsequently came to be understood as “eternal,” is, in reality, a moot

APPENDIX

Each Testament Begins and Continues the Same Way

point. The foundation (seen beginning both Genesis and John) simply will *NOT* permit the words to reference “eternity”: *NOR* will the use and understanding of these words throughout the period extending from Moses to John permit such.

(The departure in a misuse of these words, resulting in that which exists today, is often traced to Jerome’s particular choice and use of Latin words to translate *olam*, *aion*, and *aionios* in his *Latin Vulgate* [400 A.D.], a translation which became somewhat of a standard reference work for later translations.

However, again, that is neither here nor there. The foundation has been ignored, an understanding of the words have, accordingly, changed over the centuries, and Christians are left with the results today [existing translations, reflecting the way that the words have come to be understood, with far-reaching, negative ramifications].)

2) Expressing “eternal” in Scripture

Aion, as it is used in the Greek New Testament, often references “an age” (*ref.* the author’s article, “Ages and Dispensations”).

We derive our English word “aeon,” or “eon.” from *aion*. And, when the text does project matters out beyond the seven days, the seven thousand years, there is a double use of *aion*, or *aion* is used in a plural form (refer to the evident reason for this earlier in the article).

On the double use of *aion*, note verses such as Rev. 1:6; 4:9; 5:14, where the words, “forever and ever,” appear in the English text (KJV). These words are a translation of a double use of *aion*, with both words plural and articular. The more literal translation would be “the ages of the ages,” referencing the endless ages of eternity.

On the plural form of *aion*, note verses such as Luke 1:33 and Heb. 13:8. The plural form should literally be translated “ages,” referencing endless time, the endless ages of eternity.

10 BIBLICAL SUBJECT AND STRUCTURE

And a similar double use of *olam* appears in the Hebrew

text of the Old Testament (*e.g.*, Ps. 103:17; Dan. 7:18).

3) A Question

An interesting question about the preceding, set forth by more than one Greek scholar from past years has to do with *HOW* to translate the double use, or particularly the plural, of *aion* *IF* the singular form is to be translated and understood as “eternal.”

Or, a related question could be asked as well. *WHY* should there even be a double use or plural of this word *IF* the singular is all-encompassing in relation to “time”?

BUT, all of that is neither here nor there anyway, for the words don’t mean “eternal,” evident from the foundation upon which Scripture rests (having to do with “time,” *NOT* with “eternity”) and their use at the time Scripture was written.

APPENDIX

Age-Lasting and/or Eternal Salvation

As seen in this article, SALVATION in Scripture has to do, FIRST and FOREMOST, with the seventh day, the earth's coming Sabbath, the Messianic Era, set forth in the septenary foundation beginning Scripture. It would have to, for that seen in the subsequently revealed superstructure MUST remain in complete keeping with that first seen in the previously revealed foundation.

Matters concerning regal power and authority over this earth *MUST* be dealt with *FIRST*. *The rights to and exercise of this regal power* is what Scripture is about, quite evident in both the foundation and the superstructure.

Scripture is simply *NOT* about the ages beyond the Messianic Era (*NOT* about eternity), though enough has been revealed to show that man will continue in a regal capacity during these ages (note particularly Rev. 21, 22).

And THIS continued regal activity will have to do with a rule from the new earth, evidently throughout the universe.

Arlen Chitwood

APPENDIX

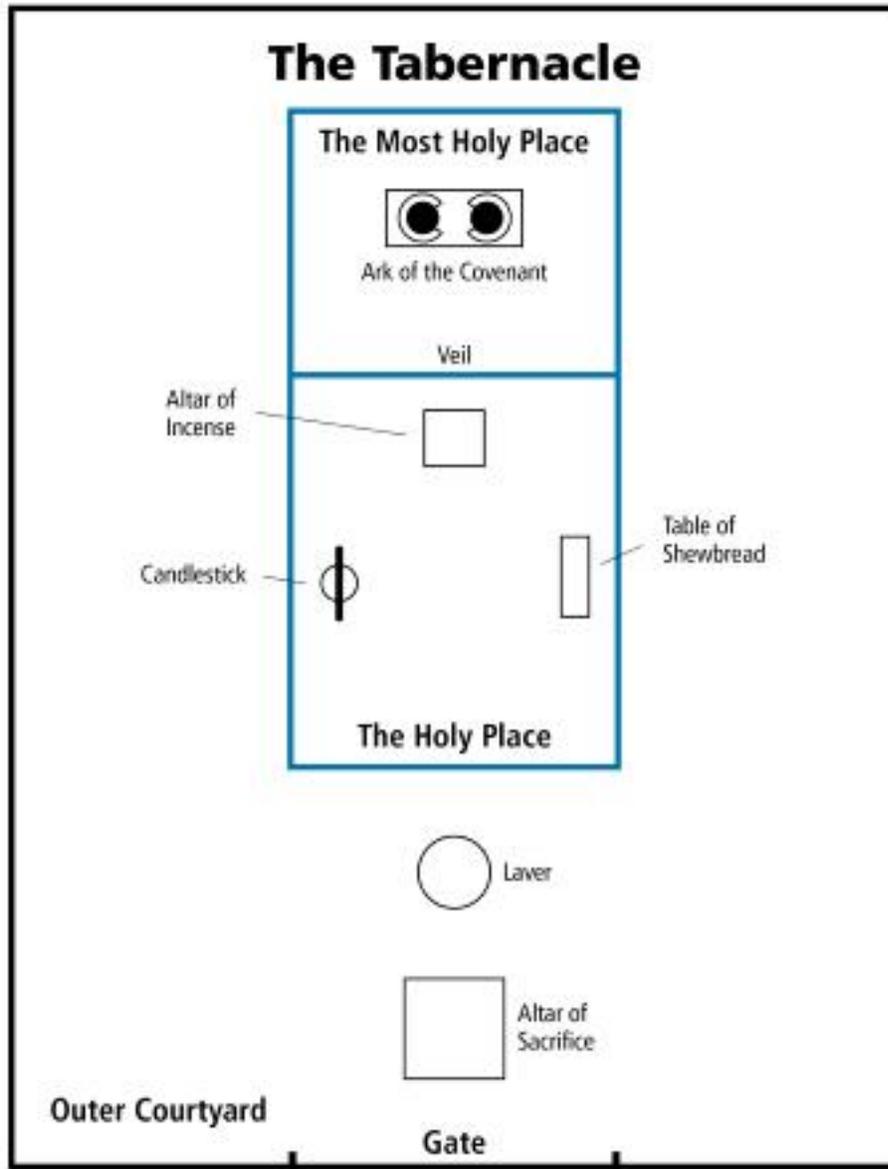


Diagram of the Tabernacle in the Wilderness

If we follow the pattern set in the Temple of God, we will be in the presence of the Lord and commune with the Lord, in an intimate way, in this age and in the age to come in His Kingdom, as His Bride –

Present our bodies as a living sacrifice upon the altar, crucifying our flesh. Romans 12:1

Wash ourselves at the bronze laver by confessing our sins to our High Priest Jesus and being washed in His Word. 1John 1:9; Eph. 5:26

After these actions, then we can enter the Holy Place within the temple where the incense, our prayers will be heard. And we will be in His Light given by the candelabra and eat of the shewbread, His Words that sustain us spiritually and allows us to mature spiritually. 1John 1:7; John 8:12, 8:48, 6:48; Rev. 8:4

After these actions, we can precede beyond the veil, into the Holy of Holies, where God communes with His people and where His glory resides. This Holy of Holies also pictures His glorious heavenly Kingdom out ahead, where we can be in that Day, should we be found faithful. And we will hear the Lord say, *I will meet with you, and I will speak with you from above the mercy seat, from between the two cherubim which are on the ark of the...* Heb. 6:19,20; Exo. 25:20-22

APPENDIX

APPENDIX

Meteorological conditions prior to the flood of Noah

Prior to the time of the Flood during Noah's day, during the antediluvian period meteorological conditions, as we know them today, did not exist. During this period, a vapor canopy enveloped the earth, above the atmosphere. Temperatures would have been fairly uniform throughout the earth with no polar ice caps. (Perhaps this explains why remains of tropical vegetation and animals are found enclosed in the ice of the Arctic regions.)

Also, during this time, with harmful rays of the sun evidently being filtered out by the vapor canopy above the atmosphere man lived for hundreds of years and could beget children during at least much of this time (e.g., Noah begetting sons at the age of five hundred in Gen. 5:32). The average life-span of man during this time, covering the ten generations from Adam to Noah (excluding Enoch, who was translated), was 912 years!

After the flood, the protective vapor canopy had been removed. This allowed the sun's rays to come through unfiltered and man's longevity was immediately shortened, almost cut in half! And the life span of man continued to decline as time went on.

We are going to see that God will restore *all things* in Christ's Millennial Reign, as promised in Acts 3:19-21 –

Act 3:19-21

*19 "Repent therefore and be converted, that your sins may be blotted out, so that times of refreshing may come from the presence of the Lord, 20 "and that He may send Jesus Christ, who was preached to you before, 21 "whom heaven must receive until the times of **restoration of all things**, which God has spoken by the mouth of all His holy prophets since the world began.*

The canopy of vapor which once existed above the atmosphere will again be established and Edenic conditions will once again exist. And with the meteorologic changes that will be restored, the long, life span of man will again exist!

(In fact, man in that coming day will live for the duration of the Millennium, in a natural body, moving right on into the eternal ages in this same type body.

When Adam was created, he was created in *an undying, natural body, designed and created by God to exist forever.*

And man is going to one day be brought back into that state.)

The uniform canopy of vapor may have been a combination of liquid water along with a deep layer of saturated vapor during the antediluvian world (before the flood of Noah). This canopy removed UV wavelengths from the light reaching the surface of the earth.

Since a more uniform, tropical, climate existed before the flood of Noah, there were no weather systems of nature seen today (high- and low-pressure areas, thunderstorms, frontal zones, etc.).

APPENDIX

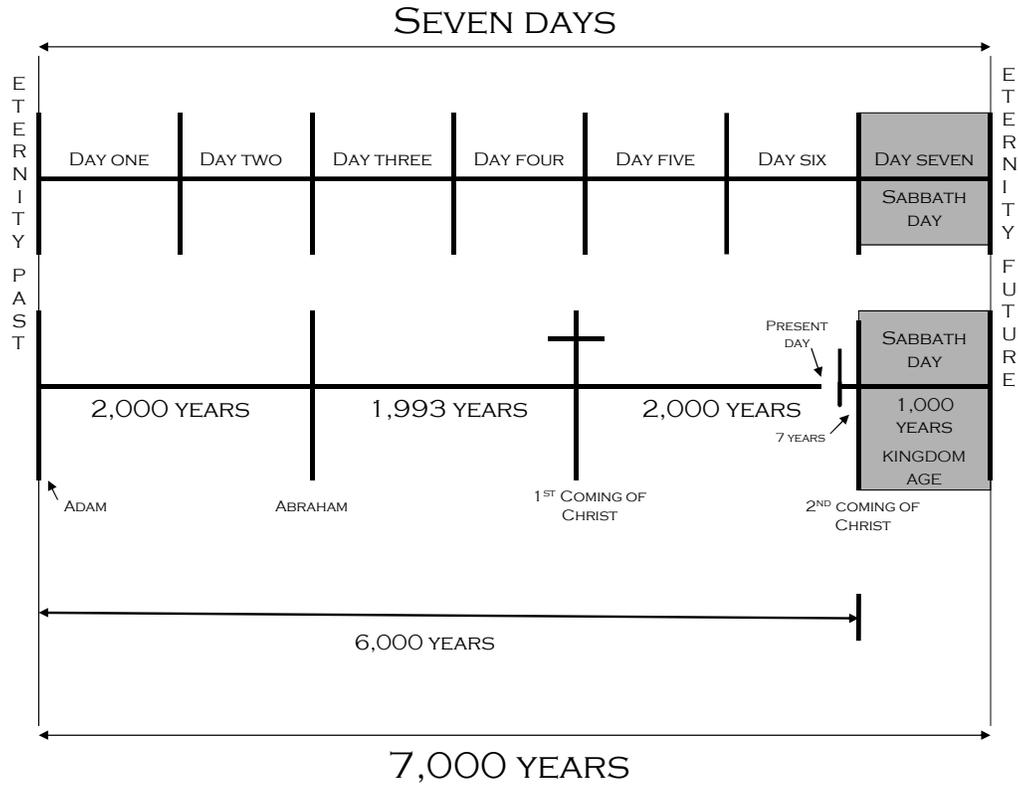
(Much of the energy distribution must have occurred in the water substance above the atmosphere with most of the radiation reaching the earth in the infrared range from the water substance. There would, then, have been only weak temperature gradients, supporting relatively weak flow on the surface of the earth.)

The only reason we have weather is to compensate for the uneven distribution of solar radiation on the earth. With the large volume of water substance above the earth before the Flood, much of the solar imbalance likely was removed by the water layer

(For further discussion on this fascinating topic, please read *Meteorology and Hydrology Conditions in Pre-Flood Days, Conditions Today* in the appendix of *Seven, Ten Generations* by Arlen Chitwood.)

APPENDIX

Seven Day Timeline



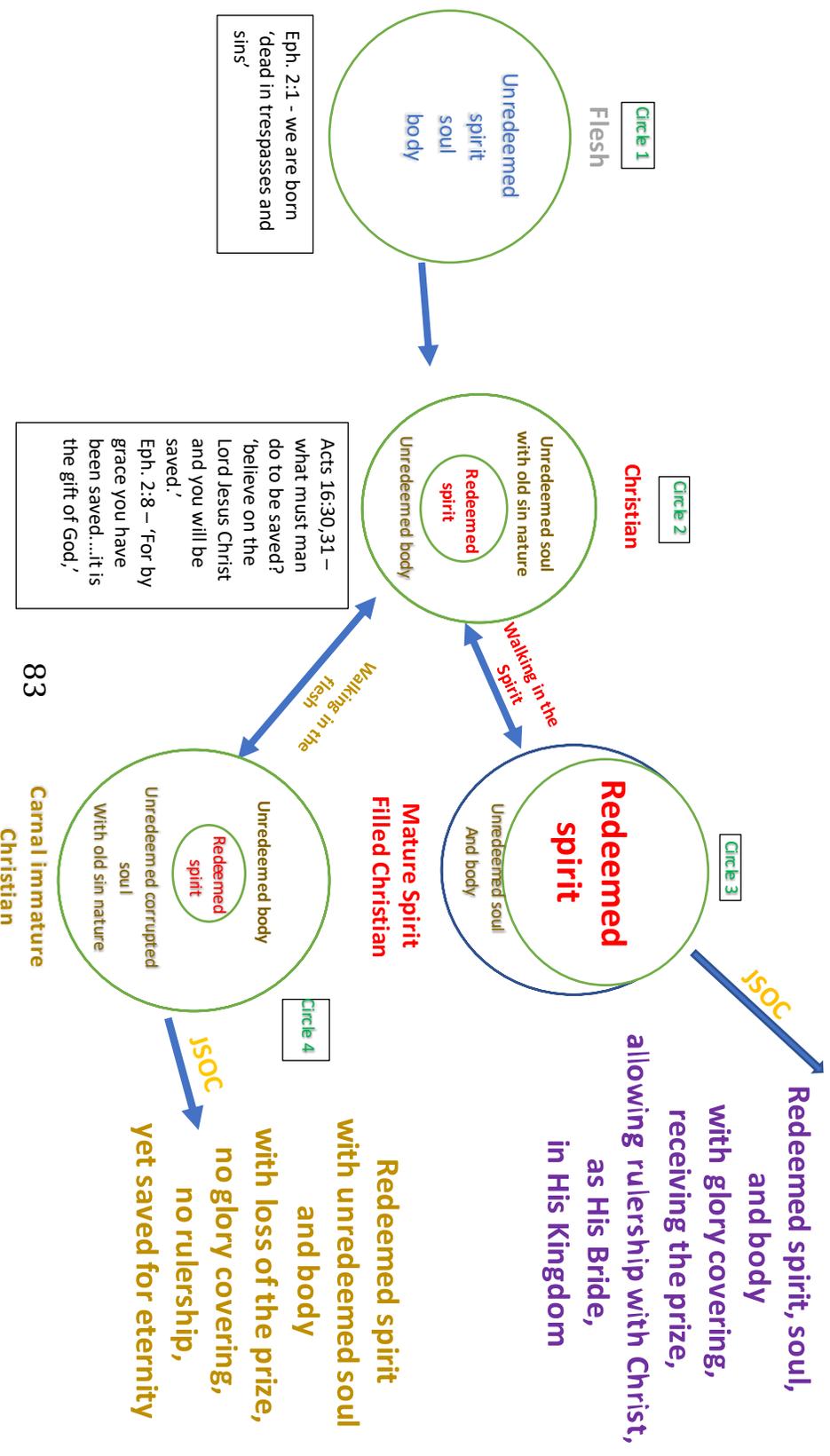
APPENDIX

Our Restoration: Redemption and Rulership



Redeemed spirit, soul,
and body
with glory covering,
receiving the prize,
allowing rulership with Christ,
as His Bride,
in His Kingdom

Redeemed spirit
with unredeemed soul
and body
with loss of the prize,
no glory covering,
no rulership,
yet saved for eternity



Eph. 2:1 - we are born
'dead in trespasses and
sins'

Acts 16:30,31 -
what must man
do to be saved?
'believe on the
Lord Jesus Christ
and you will be
saved.'
Eph. 2:8 - 'For by
grace you have
been saved...it is
the gift of God,'

APPENDIX

APPENDIX

APPENDIX

THE KINGDOMS OF THIS WORLD

“The KINGDOMS of this world have become the kingdoms of our Lord and of His Christ, and He shall reign forever and ever!” (Revelation 11:15)

| KINGDOMS: | <i>Daniel Ch.2</i> | <i>Daniel Ch.4</i> | <i>Daniel Ch.7</i> | <i>Daniel Ch.8</i> | <i>Hosea 13:7-8</i> | <i>Amos 5:18-20</i> | <i>Revelation 13:1-2</i> |
|---|--|--|--|---|-------------------------|--------------------------------|---|
| BABYLON (Including Assyria) | Head Of Gold | Tree cut down. Beastly Grazing. | Lion | | Lion | Lion | Mouth Of Lion |
| MEDO- PERSIAN | Chest/Arms of Silver | | Bear | Ram w. 2 horns. 2 nd is larger | Bear | Bear | Bear's feet |
| GRECIAN | Belly Of Bronze | | Leopard | Male Goat 1 + 4 Horns | Leopard | Went into the House | Leopard |
| ANTI- CHRIST | Legs of Iron Feet of Iron & Clay | | Terrible Beast | Small Horn grows GREAT | Wild Beast | Serpent Bites | Beast from sea w. 7 heads & 10 crowns. Dragon |
| CHRIST'S MILLENNIAL REIGN (1000 Years) | Stone cut out of Mountain strikes the image at its feet & destroys the whole image | | Court seated. Ancient of Days | | | DAY Of The LORD | |

APPENDIX

APPENDIX

The Kingdom of God

In Scripture the Kingdom of God, and the Kingdom of heaven, and the Millennial Reign of Christ from the heavens, and the Kingdom in eternity future, **all refer to the same Kingdom.**

It was this Kingdom which was in view in eternity past when Lucifer and angelic beings ruled from the heavens over the earth. And *the earth* and the sanctuaries associated with it were then ruined (Gen. 1:1, 2a).

It was this Kingdom which was in view in in the seven-day restoration of the ruined kingdom (Gen. 1:2b-25).

It was this Kingdom which was in view when man was created to rule the restored kingdom (Gen. 1:26-28).

It was this kingdom which was in view when the incumbent ruler (Satan) brought about man's fall so that man would be disqualified to rule this kingdom.

Matthew 4:1-2, 8-11

1 Then Jesus was led up by the Spirit into the wilderness to be tempted by the devil. 2 And when He had fasted forty days and forty nights, afterward He was hungry. ... 8 Again, the devil took Him up on an exceedingly high mountain, and showed Him all the kingdoms of the world and their glory. 9 And he said to Him, "All these things I will give You if You will fall down and worship me." 10 Then Jesus said to him, "Away with you, Satan! For it is written, 'You shall worship the LORD your God, and Him only you shall serve.' " 11 Then the devil left Him, and behold, angels came and ministered to Him.

Recall that Adam is *a type of Him who was to come* (Rom. 5:24).

The **first man, the first Adam**, appears in Genesis; **the second Man, the last Adam** (Christ), appears in Matthew. And it is very interesting that Satan appears **both** times; and the temptations have to do with a kingdom **both** times, the same kingdom!

APPENDIX

In both temptation accounts in Gen. 3 and Matt. 4., it is the kingdom which Satan has ruled from the beginning, that is in view.

This is the kingdom over which Satan, with his angels, had ruled from the beginning (*cf.* Ezek. 28:14ff; Dan. 4:17, 25; Luke 4:5, 6), and continues to rule today; this is the kingdom which the first man, the first Adam, was created to rule, replacing the incumbent ruler (Gen. 1:26- 28) before the fall.

(Recall that in eternity past, angelic beings ruled over the earth and its' associated sanctuaries. And Lucifer was the *anointed cherub* or *Messianic angel* who ruled in eternity past. In both the first and last books of the Bible, and in Ezekiel 28:12-18 of eternity past, we see the garden of Eden, [a garden of pleasure, paradise], as a place of rulership. Eden is where we see the man, Adam, and the woman placed in Genesis and they were created to rule or have dominion according to Gen. 1:26).

Matthew 3:1-2

1 In those days John the Baptist came preaching in the wilderness of Judea, 2 and saying, "Repent, for the kingdom of heaven is at hand!"

God had created the nation of Israel to be His chosen people. And the message of repentance, *for the kingdom of heaven is at hand* (Matt.6:33), again speaks of the offer of ruling from the heavens over the earth in Christ's Millennial Kingdom. As we know, Israel rejected this message and crucified their King. Due to their rejection, the offer of rulership from the heavens over the earth would be given to a new nation, the Church –

"Therefore say I unto you, The kingdom of God shall be taken from you, and given to a nation bringing forth the fruits thereof." Matt. 21:43

And although Israel has lost the heavenly portion of Christ's Kingdom, they will still rule in the earthly realm, covenanted to David, in the Messianic era.

The kingdom of this world, with its rulership in heavenly place (the kingdom of the heavens) must become *that of our Lord and of his Christ* before the kingdom can be restored to Israel. Recall that Israel is the physical seed of

APPENDIX

Abraham, and the church is the spiritual seed of Abraham, through faith in the Son (Gal. 3:29).

In the coming age, when *the kingdom of the world has become that of our Lord and of his Christ*, the seed (the spiritual seed) of Abraham above will rule through the physical seed of Abraham below.

Revelation 11:15

15 Then the seventh angel sounded: And there were loud voices in heaven, saying, "The kingdoms of this world have become the kingdoms of our Lord and of His Christ, and He shall reign forever and ever!"

And finally, at the conclusion of Christ's Millennial Reign, a new heaven and earth will be created –*we, according to His promise, look for new heavens and a new earth in which righteousness dwells* (2Peter 3:13).

Revelation 21:1-4

1 Now I saw a new heaven and a new earth, for the first heaven and the first earth had passed away. Also there was no more sea. 2 Then I, John, saw the holy city, New Jerusalem, coming down out of heaven from God, prepared as a bride adorned for her husband. 3 And I heard a loud voice from heaven saying, "Behold, the tabernacle of God is with men, and He will dwell with them, and they shall be His people. God Himself will be with them and be their God. 4 "And God will wipe away every tear from their eyes; there shall be no more death, nor sorrow, nor crying. There shall be no more pain, for the former things have passed away."

In eternity future, it will be from the new heaven and earth that the Father and the Son, along with all the eternally redeemed, will rule the universe. And this is the rulership that Satan sought after in his rebellion in eternity past (Isa. 14).

This is such an important message, and it is why Jesus told us to *seek first His Kingdom and His Righteousness*. (Matt. 6:33).

APPENDIX

Hebrews 12:28

28 Therefore, since we are receiving a kingdom which cannot be shaken, let us have grace, by which we may serve God acceptably with reverence and godly fear.

APPENDIX

The Gift

All humans need restoration from their fallen state. We are all born with the original sin passed down from the first man Adam. We are all born spiritually dead.

Ephesians. 2:1

And you were dead [spiritually] in your trespasses and sins.

So how can someone be quickened or made alive spiritually? How can someone receive this free gift of salvation? God always requires death and shed blood for the salvation of fallen man.

Hebrews 9:22

“And according to the Law, one may almost say, all things are cleansed with blood, and without shedding of blood there is no forgiveness.”

Jesus is our Passover Lamb that has died on the cross for our sins. He paid the penalty for our sins on Calvary. His blood cleanses us.

John 1:29

“The next day John saw Jesus coming toward him, and said, “Behold! The Lamb of God who takes away the sin of the world!”

In order for fallen man to be saved, God requires that man **believe**, trust, in His Son Jesus, the substitute Lamb of God that has taken away the sins of the world!

Act 16:30-31

*30..., “Sirs, what must I do to be saved?” 31 So they said, “**Believe** on the Lord Jesus Christ, and you will be saved, you and your household.”*

John 3:16

*“For God so loved the world, that He gave His only begotten Son, that whoever **believes** in Him shall not perish, but have eternal life.*

The Lamb has died, His blood has been shed, and all that is left — all that can possibly be left — for man to do is simply believe that which has already been done on his behalf.

Eternal salvation is by grace (that which God is able to do completely apart from human merit), through faith, through believing on God’s Son –

Ephesians 2: 8,9

“For by grace you have been saved through faith; and that not of yourselves, it is the gift of God; not as a result of works, so that no one may boast.”

God, because of His love for fallen man — created in His image, after His likeness, for a purpose (Gen. 1:26-28) — gave his only begotten Son (I Cor. 15:3), that whosoever believeth in him (Acts 16:31) should not perish but have everlasting life.

Jesus paid it all! Christ is the One Who died, Christ is the One Who performed the work to obtain man’s salvation, and God is satisfied with His Son’s finished work.

All man can possibly do is simply receive, through believing on the Son, that which has already been done on his behalf.

APPENDIX

Will you believe on the Lord Jesus Christ today? Will you believe that Christ died on the cross for you? If you believe on the Lord Jesus Christ, then you have received the free gift of eternal salvation, praise God.

The Prize

After a person trusts in Christ as their Savior, we have a spirit that is alive to God. Our now alive spirit is separated from our unredeemed soul, our sinful nature, that remains associated with darkness and death. God created man to rule (Gen. 1:26) over His creation. Currently, Satan and the fallen angels are reigning from the heavens over the earth (Eph. 6:12). Jesus is returning soon, and the works of the Christian will be judged at the Judgment Seat of Christ.

2Corinthians 5:10

10 For we must all appear before the judgment seat of Christ, that each one may receive the things done in the body, according to what he has done, whether good or bad.

Confessed sins will not be seen at the Judgment Seat of Christ (1John 1:9). Scripture is clear that the Lord will reward the Christian who has been faithfully obedient to His Word! And the reward for the good, and faithful servant is to rule and reign with Christ in His Millennial Kingdom. The reward is the inheritance, and the inheritance is reigning with Him in His heavenly Kingdom (Matt. 25:34, Col. 3:23-25).

Colossians 3:23-24

*23 And whatever you do, do it heartily, as to the Lord and not to men, 24 knowing that from the Lord you will receive the **reward of the inheritance**; for you serve the Lord Christ.*

Matthew 25:34

*34 "Then the King will say to those on His right hand, 'Come, you blessed of My Father, **inherit the kingdom** prepared for you from the foundation of the world:*

Not all Christians will receive this privilege of ruling and reigning with Christ in His Kingdom. Only those who have been found faithful at the Judgment Seat of Christ. Confess your sins (1John 1:9), obey His Word so that you will receive the salvation of your soul and the prize of reigning with Christ as His joint heir in His Kingdom out ahead.

James 1:21

*21 Therefore lay aside all filthiness and overflow of wickedness, and receive with meekness the implanted word, which is able to **save your souls**.*

Matthew 25:21

Well done, thou good and faithful servant: thou hast been faithful over a few things, I will make thee ruler over many things: enter thou into the joy of thy lord."

Revelation 3:21

To him that overcometh will I grant to sit with me in my throne, even as I also overcame, and am set down with my Father in his throne."

Seek first His Kingdom and His Righteousness!

<http://www.cornerstonejacksonville.com>

<http://www.lampbroadcast.org/pdfbooks.html>

APPENDIX

Parable of the vinedresser

The servants are the prophets of God, persecuted by the leaders of Israel:

Hebrews 11:35-40

35.... Others were tortured, not accepting deliverance, that they might obtain a better resurrection. 36 Still others had trial of mockings and scourgings, yes, and of chains and imprisonment. 37 They were stoned, they were sawn in two, were tempted, were slain with the sword. They wandered about in sheepskins and goatskins, being destitute, afflicted, tormented-- 38 of whom the world was not worthy. They wandered in deserts and mountains, in dens and caves of the earth. 39 And all these, having obtained a good testimony through faith, did not receive the promise, 40 God having provided something better for us, that they should not be made perfect apart from us.

Matthew 23:27-36

27 "Woe to you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! For you are like whitewashed tombs which indeed appear beautiful outwardly, but inside are full of dead men's bones and all uncleanness. 28 "Even so you also outwardly appear righteous to men, but inside you are full of hypocrisy and lawlessness. 29 "Woe to you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! Because you build the tombs of the prophets and adorn the monuments of the righteous, 30 "and say, 'If we had lived in the days of our fathers, we would not have been partakers with them in the blood of the prophets.' 31 "Therefore you are witnesses against yourselves that you are sons of those who murdered the prophets. 32 "Fill up, then, the measure of your fathers' guilt. 33 "Serpents, brood of vipers! How can you escape the condemnation of hell? 34 "Therefore, indeed, I send you prophets, wise men, and scribes: some of them you will kill and crucify, and some of them you will scourge in your synagogues and persecute from city to city, 35 "that on you may come all the righteous blood shed on the earth, from the blood of righteous Abel to the blood of Zechariah, son of Berechiah, whom you murdered between the temple and the altar. 36 "Assuredly, I say to you, all these things will come upon this generation.

Zechariah, son of high priest Berechiah (Jehoiada):

After the high priest Berechiah (Jehoiada) died, the Israelite priests served idols. God sends Zechariah, son of high priest Berechiah, to warn them and they stoned him to death.

2 Chronicles 24:18-22

18 Therefore they left the house of the LORD God of their fathers, and served wooden images and idols; and wrath came upon Judah and Jerusalem because of their trespass. 19 Yet He sent prophets to them, to bring them back to the LORD; and they testified against them, but they would not listen. 20 Then the Spirit of God came upon Zechariah the son of Jehoiada the priest,

APPENDIX

who stood above the people, and said to them, "Thus says God: 'Why do you transgress the commandments of the LORD, so that you cannot prosper? Because you have forsaken the LORD, He also has forsaken you.' " 21 So they conspired against him, and at the command of the king they stoned him with stones in the court of the house of the LORD. 22 Thus Joash the king did not remember the kindness which Jehoiada his father had done to him, but killed his son; and as he died, he said, "The LORD look on it, and repay!"

Elijah:

Elijah was a prophet sent by God to warn Ahab to turn away from Baal worship. Elijah was pursued by Ahab and his wife, Jezebel.

1Kings 16:30; 19:1,2

30 Now Ahab the son of Omri did evil in the sight of the LORD, more than all who were before him.

19:1 And Ahab told Jezebel all that Elijah had done, also how he had executed all the prophets with the sword. 2 Then Jezebel sent a messenger to Elijah, saying, "So let the gods do to me, and more also, if I do not make your life as the life of one of them by tomorrow about this time."

Isaiah:

Isaiah was a prophet sent by God to warn Israel to repent or there will be judgement. According to historical records, Isaiah (whose name means “the Lord saves”) was sawn in two by the King Manasseh of Judah.

Read the parable of the vineyard in Isaiah 5:1-7.

Jeremiah:

Jeremiah’s name means “whom Jehovah appointed.” He is known as the weeping prophet. He warned the Israelites that God would severely chastise them for their unfaithfulness. God’s hedge of protection would be removed from the nation and they would be taken into Babylonian captivity.

Jeremiah frequently opposed the king’s favored prophets, gaining more adversaries in high places. During a lull in the final days of the siege on Jerusalem, Jeremiah left the city presumably to visit his family at Anathoth. He was apprehended and arrested in Benjamin, accused of desertion, beaten, and imprisoned ([Jeremiah 37:11–16](#)). After appealing to King Zedekiah, Jeremiah was placed under house arrest. While there, Jeremiah’s enemies had him cast into an abandoned cistern to die, but he was rescued by an Ethiopian named Ebed-Melech ([Jeremiah 38](#)).

APPENDIX

With regards to how Jeremiah died, the Scriptures leave no record. Church tradition suggests that Jeremiah was stoned to death in Egypt by the Jews.

New Testament Jewish saints warned Israel to repent, and the Jewish leaders persecuted them also:

Stephen: stoned to death.

Peter: was crucified, possibly upside down.

John 21:18-19

18 "Most assuredly, I say to you, when you were younger, you girded yourself and walked where you wished; but when you are old, you will stretch out your hands, and another will gird you and carry you where you do not wish." 19 This He spoke, signifying by what death he would glorify God. And when He had spoken this, He said to him, "Follow Me."

Paul: imprisoned and executed, possibly beheaded.

Jesus tells us to expect persecution.

John 15:18-20

18 "If the world hates you, you know that it hated Me before it hated you. 19 "If you were of the world, the world would love its own. Yet because you are not of the world, but I chose you out of the world, therefore the world hates you. 20 "Remember the word that I said to you, 'A servant is not greater than his master.' If they persecuted Me, they will also persecute you. If they kept My word, they will keep yours also.

2Timothy 3:12

"Yes, and all who desire to live godly in Christ Jesus will suffer persecution."

Psalms 90:1-4

1 A Prayer of Moses, the man of God. Lord, You have been our dwelling place in all generations. 2 Before the mountains were born Or You gave birth to the earth (whole earth)and the world (habitable part of earth; country), Even from everlasting to everlasting, You are God. 3 You turn man back into dust And say, "Return, O children of men." 4 For a thousand years in Your sight Are like yesterday when it passes by, Or as a watch in the night. NASB

Gave birth (bring forth) in v.2 is the Hebrew word *khool* which means to twist or writhe in pain (especially of parturition-childbirth)

APPENDIX

The earth coming up out of the water (place of death) on the third day. In this passage, the earth coming up out of the water is compared to the birth of a baby twisting and coming out of the womb.

(This phrase is used to describe Israel and their future delivery at the end of the tribulation –

Isaiah 66:8-9

8 Who has heard such a thing? Who has seen such things? Shall the earth be made to give birth in one day? Or shall a nation be born at once? For as soon as Zion was in labor, She gave birth to her children. 9 Shall I bring to the time of birth, and not cause delivery?" says the LORD. "Shall I who cause delivery shut up the womb?" says your God.)

After the fall of Adam and the woman, we read that the woman would bring forth children in pain –

Genesis 3:16

16 To the woman He said: "I will greatly multiply your sorrow and your conception; In pain you shall bring forth children; Your desire shall be for your husband, And he shall rule over you."

The earth being brought forth out of the waters is painful twisting action, perhaps describing the earth as twisting and having rotation as it came up out of the waters. But there is a deeper spiritual meaning and pattern set here by the third day.

The third day in Scripture points to resurrection, being raised in newness of life to follow Christ –

And suffering must precede glory. We must crucify our flesh, take up our cross and follow Him in order to be found faithful at the JSOC (Judgment Seat of Christ) and receive His glory, to co-reign with Christ in His coming Kingdom.

Romans 6:3-5

3 Or do you not know that as many of us as were baptized into Christ Jesus were baptized into His death? 4 Therefore we were buried with Him through baptism into death, that just as Christ was raised from the dead by the glory of the Father, even so we also should walk in newness of life. 5 For if we have been united together in the likeness of His death, certainly we also shall be in the likeness of His resurrection,

After Jesus was resurrected, he appeared to his disciples on the road to Emmaus. The disciples didn't recognize the Lord at first –

APPENDIX

Luke 24:13-21, 25-27, 30-33, 44-46

13 Now behold, two of them were traveling that same day to a village called Emmaus, which was seven miles from Jerusalem. 14 And they talked together of all these things which had happened. 15 So it was, while they conversed and reasoned, that Jesus Himself drew near and went with them. 16 But their eyes were restrained, so that they did not know Him. 17 And He said to them, "What kind of conversation is this that you have with one another as you walk and are sad?" 18 Then the one whose name was Cleopas answered and said to Him, "Are You the only stranger in Jerusalem, and have You not known the things which happened there in these days?" 19 And He said to them, "What things?" So they said to Him, "The things concerning Jesus of Nazareth, who was a Prophet mighty in deed and word before God and all the people, 20 "and how the chief priests and our rulers delivered Him to be condemned to death, and crucified Him. 21 "But we were hoping that it was He who was going to redeem Israel. Indeed, besides all this, today is the third day since these things happened. ... 25 Then He said to them, "O foolish ones, and slow of heart to believe in all that the prophets have spoken! 26 "Ought not the Christ to have suffered these things and to enter into His glory?" 27 And beginning at Moses and all the Prophets, He expounded to them in all the Scriptures the things concerning Himself. ... 30 Now it came to pass, as He sat at the table with them, that He took bread, blessed and broke it, and gave it to them. 31 Then their eyes were opened and they knew Him; and He vanished from their sight. 32 And they said to one another, "Did not our heart burn within us while He talked with us on the road, and while He opened the Scriptures to us?" 33 So they rose up that very hour and returned to Jerusalem, and found the eleven and those who were with them gathered together, ... 44 Then He said to them, "These are the words which I spoke to you while I was still with you, that all things must be fulfilled which were written in the Law of Moses and the Prophets and the Psalms concerning Me." 45 And He opened their understanding, that they might comprehend the Scriptures. 46 Then He said to them, "Thus it is written, and thus it was necessary for the Christ to suffer and to rise from the dead the third day,

There is much in this passage to make note of.

The eyes of the disciples were *opened* and they knew Him **after** they ate the bread. Jesus is the bread of life and He is the incarnate Word of God. And it was only after His body (the Bread) was broken on the cross that the Holy Spirit was sent to teach us and open our eyes to the Scriptures (the Bread) so that we may know Him!

The word *knew* in this passage is the Greek word *epignosis* which means to become thoroughly acquainted with, to know thoroughly; to know accurately, know well. It refers to having a mature knowledge regarding the Lord's coming Kingdom out ahead.

Please take note of the word *opened* which is mentioned three times in the above passage.

The word *opened* means to open by dividing, the opening of the womb by the first-born son.

If we rightly divide (open) the Word of God, we can become first-born sons, joint heirs with Christ in His coming Kingdom.

APPENDIX

APPENDIX

Examples of types and anti-types in the Bible study.

A *type* is something that points to something else; a type can be seen in a person, place, thing, or event in the Bible.

The *antitype* is the fulfillment of the type.

When looking at the type, the two comparative words “as” and “so” can be used to make the connections. The word “as” is used for the type and the word “so” is used for the antitype.

For example:

John 3:14

*14 As Moses lifted up the serpent in the wilderness, even **so** must the Son of Man*

be lifted up;

In John 3:14, we see that Moses lifting up the serpent is a **type** of the Son of God, Jesus, being lifted up on the cross, which is the **antitype** (i.e., the fulfillment of the type).

The Serpent on the Pole

In Numbers 21: 5-9, we read about Moses lifting the serpent on the pole. The passage has to do with God’s children, the Israelites, murmuring about God’s provision for them as they traveled on their wilderness journey. In particular, they loathed the manna, the heavenly bread (which is a picture of the Word of God and the Bread of life, Jesus Christ; see John 6:31-51).

Numbers 21:5-9:

Then they set out from Mount Hor by the way of the Red Sea, to go around the land of Edom; and the people became impatient because of the journey.

The people spoke against God and Moses, “Why have you brought us up out of Egypt to die in the wilderness? For there is no food and no water,

and we loathe this miserable food [manna].”

The LORD sent fiery serpents among the people and they bit the people, so

that many people of Israel died.

APPENDIX

So the people came to Moses and said, "We have sinned, because we have spoken against the LORD and you; intercede with the LORD, that He may remove the serpents from us." And Moses interceded for the people.

Then the LORD said to Moses, "Make a fiery serpent, and set it on a standard; and it shall come about, that everyone who is bitten, when he looks at it, he will live." And Moses made a bronze serpent and set it on the standard; and it came about, that if a serpent bit any man, when he looked to the bronze serpent, he lived.

These Israelites were not pagans. They were the redeemed children of God that had appropriated the blood of their Passover lamb and were now to follow God in their wilderness journey. But they did not like God's leading. They complained and murmured against God provision, God Himself and against Moses. So, God reprimanded His children and sent fiery serpents to bite them and many died.

Then the Israelites realized their sin against God, and they cried out. God tells Moses to make a serpent on a pole and when anyone receives the deadly bite (of sin), they are to look at that serpent on the pole and they will be revived and restored! This serpent on the pole is of course Jesus Christ who willingly took man's sin upon Himself:

2 Corinthians 5:21:

He made Him who knew no sin to be sin on our behalf, so that we might become the righteousness of God in Him.

In John 3:14 Jesus says, *"As Moses lifted up the serpent in the wilderness, even so must the Son of Man be lifted up..."*

Jesus refers to this passage from Numbers 21, and says He, like the serpent on the pole, must be lifted up on the cross.

If a believer, a redeemed child (as were the Israelites), confesses their sin and looks to the cross, then the blood that poured out of the side of our High Priest Jesus on the cross will cleanse them and heal them. They will not be affected by the bite of our sin at the Judgment Seat of Christ and He will revive us!

So, Numbers 21 and John 3:14 brings us back to 1 John 1:9, which states:

If we [Christians] confess our sins, He [our High Priest, our serpent on the pole] is faithful and just to forgive us our sins [our murmuring, our complaining, our rebellion against God], and to cleanse us [with His blood] from all unrighteousness.

The serpent on the pole is the medical symbol for the World Health Organization. Most people believe the serpent on the pole used in medicine originated from Greek mythology (in particular, the Rod of Asclepius, which has two serpents, not one). But the writings of Moses in Numbers

APPENDIX

21, inspired from God, came first and this passage of scripture points to God's restorative healing after confession of sin.

Enoch is a type of the rapture of the church.

Genesis 5: 23- 25

“and all the days of Enoch were 365 years and Enoch walked with God and he was not for God took him “

Just as Enoch was *taken up* by God, so will the church be raptured or taken up by God.

1 Thessalonians 4:13-18

But I do not want you to be ignorant, brethren, concerning those who have fallen asleep, lest you sorrow as others who have no hope. For if we believe that Jesus died and rose again, even so God will bring with Him those who sleep in Jesus.

For this we say to you by the word of the Lord, that we who are alive and remain until the coming of the Lord will by no means precede those who are asleep. For the Lord Himself will descend from heaven with a shout, with the voice of an archangel, and with the trumpet of God. And the dead in Christ will rise first. Then we who are alive and remain shall be caught up together with them in the clouds to meet the Lord in the air. And thus we shall always be with the Lord. Therefore comfort one another with these words.

Enoch, the seventh generation from Adam, had a son named Methuselah (who lived 969 years), and Methuselah had a son named Lamech who had Noah. Enoch was the great grandfather of Noah and Noah was the tenth generation from Adam. After Enoch was taken up, the worldwide flood occurred.

The flood of Noah's Day is a type of the seven - year tribulation. After the rapture of the church, the seven - year tribulation period begins. There will be world -wide destruction under the one world government led by the antichrist.

Now let's focus on Isaac and Joseph as types:

Isaac:

Isaac is the promised seed and son supernaturally born to father Abraham and his wife Sarah.

Genesis 18:10-14

APPENDIX

10 And He said, "I will certainly return to you according to the time of life, and behold, Sarah your wife shall have a son." (Sarah was listening in the tent door which was behind him.) 11 Now Abraham and Sarah were old, well advanced in age; and Sarah had passed the age of childbearing. 12 Therefore Sarah laughed within herself, saying, "After I have grown old, shall I have pleasure, my lord being old also?" 13 And the LORD said to Abraham, "Why did Sarah laugh, saying, 'Shall I surely bear a child, since I am old?' 14 "Is anything too hard for the LORD? At the appointed time I will return to you, according to the time of life, and Sarah shall have a son."

Genesis 21:1-3

1 And the LORD visited Sarah as He had said, and the LORD did for Sarah as He had spoken. 2 For Sarah conceived and bore Abraham a son in his old age, at the set time of which God had spoken to him. 3 And Abraham called the name of his son who was born to him--whom Sarah bore to him--Isaac.

Compare to Jesus:

Jesus was born supernaturally as God 's Spirit enveloped mother Mary. Jesus had no physical earthly father and therefore did not carry the old sin nature passed on from Adam on down in the male seed. Jesus was the supernatural hyperstatic union between God and man and He too was the promised Son and Seed as Isaac was (Gen. 3:15).

Genesis 22:1-18

1 Now it came to pass after these things that God tested Abraham, and said to him, "Abraham!" And he said, "Here I am." 2 Then He said, "Take now your son, your only son Isaac, whom you love, and go to the land of Moriah, and offer him there as a burnt offering on one of the mountains of which I shall tell you." 3 So Abraham rose early in the morning and saddled his donkey, and took two of his young men with him, and Isaac his son; and he split the wood for the burnt offering, and arose and went to the place of which God had told him. 4 Then on the third day Abraham lifted his eyes and saw the place afar off. 5 And Abraham said to his young men, "Stay here with the donkey; the lad and I will go yonder and worship, and we will come back to you." 6 So Abraham took the wood of the burnt offering and laid it on Isaac his son; and he took the fire in his hand, and a knife, and the two of them went together. 7 But Isaac spoke to Abraham his father and said, "My father!" And he said, "Here I am, my son." Then he said, "Look, the fire and the wood, but where is the lamb for a burnt offering?" 8 And Abraham said, "My son, God will provide for Himself the lamb for a burnt offering." So the two of them went together. 9 Then they came to the place of which God had told him. And Abraham built an altar there and placed the wood in order; and he bound Isaac his son and laid him on the altar, upon the wood. 10 And Abraham stretched out his hand and took the knife to slay his son. 11 But the Angel of the LORD called to him from heaven and said, "Abraham, Abraham!" So he said, "Here I am." 12 And He said, "Do not lay your hand on the lad, or do anything to him; for now I know that you fear God, since you have not withheld your son, your only son, from Me." 13 Then Abraham lifted his eyes and looked, and there behind him was a ram caught in a thicket by its horns. So Abraham went and took the ram, and offered it up for a burnt offering instead of his

APPENDIX

son. 14 And Abraham called the name of the place, The-LORD-Will-Provide; as it is said to this day, "In the Mount of the LORD it shall be provided." 15 Then the Angel of the LORD called to Abraham a second time out of heaven, 16 and said: "By Myself I have sworn, says the LORD, because you have done this thing, and have not withheld your son, your only son-- 17 "blessing I will bless you, and multiplying I will multiply your descendants as the stars of the heaven and as the sand which is on the seashore; and your descendants shall possess the gate of their enemies. 18 "In your seed all the nations of the earth shall be blessed, because you have obeyed My voice."

Compare v.2 to John 3:16 where it says:

"for God so loved the world that he gave his only begotten son that whoever believes in him should not perish But have eternal life."

(Also, Mount Moriah is in the same location where Christ was crucified in Golgotha.)

In Gen. 22:3-6 we read *on the third day Abraham lifted his eyes and saw the place afar off* and he faithfully obeyed.

And just as the son, Isaac, carried the wood for a burnt offering up to the mountain, so did Christ carry the wood cross on His back in faithful obedience, to be our sacrifice.

Abraham and Isaac went alone up to the mountain as Christ carried the cross and our sins alone.

(The word lad means grown man, not a child, and by the timeline given when Abraham left Ur, Isaac would be ~33 years of age, the age Christ died on the cross.)

7 But Isaac spoke to Abraham his father and said, "My father!" And he said, "Here I am, my son." Then he said, "Look, the fire and the wood, but where is the lamb for a burnt offering?" 8 And Abraham said, "My son, God will provide for Himself the lamb for a burnt offering." So the two of them went together.

Circle *Himself* in your Bible. God would provide **Himself** as the lamb that would be the burnt offering to take away the sins of man.

9 Then they came to the place of which God had told him. And Abraham built an altar there and placed the wood in order; and he bound Isaac his son and laid him on the altar, upon the wood. 10 And Abraham stretched out his hand and took the knife to slay his son. 11 But the Angel of the LORD called to him from heaven and said, "Abraham, Abraham!" So he said, "Here I am." 12 And He said, "Do not lay your hand on the lad, or do anything to him; for now I know that you fear God, since you have not withheld your son, your only son, from Me."

Notice the language in v.12. Father Abraham, like God the Father, did not withhold His only begotten Son.

APPENDIX

13 Then Abraham lifted his eyes and looked, and there behind him was a ram caught in a thicket by its horns. So Abraham went and took the ram, and offered it up for a burnt offering instead of his son. 14 And Abraham called the name of the place, The-LORD-Will-Provide; as it is said to this day, "In the Mount of the LORD it shall be provided." 15 Then the Angel of the LORD called to Abraham a second time out of heaven, 16 and said: "By Myself I have sworn, says the LORD, because you have done this thing, and have not withheld your son, your only son-- 17 "blessing I will bless you, and multiplying I will multiply your descendants as the stars of the heaven and as the sand which is on the seashore; and your descendants shall possess the gate of their enemies. 18 "In your seed all the nations of the earth shall be blessed, because you have obeyed My voice."

In v.13 we read that God provided another substitute for the sacrifice. A ram caught in the thicket. Thorns and thistles were part of the curse on the earth after the fall of man. Christ, our substitute lamb, wore a crown of thorns upon His head at calvary, picturing Jesus taking the sins of the world upon Himself.

Genesis 3:17-18

17 Then to Adam He said, "Because you have heeded the voice of your wife, and have eaten from the tree of which I commanded you, saying, 'You shall not eat of it': "Cursed is the ground for your sake; In toil you shall eat of it All the days of your life. 18 Both thorns and thistles it shall bring forth for you, And you shall eat the herb of the field.

Due to Abraham's obedience, God promises him blessings saying:

"blessing I will bless you, and multiplying I will multiply your descendants as the stars of the heaven (a picture of rulership from the heavens in the future) and as the sand (a picture of rulership on the earth) which is on the seashore; and your descendants shall possess the gate of their enemies. 18 "In your seed all the nations of the earth shall be blessed, because you have obeyed My voice."

Now let's review Joseph as a type of Christ. We will also review a table listing other types/antitypes at the end of this introduction.

Joseph as a type of Christ

Joseph:

Abraham had Isaac and Isaac had Jacob who had twelve sons that become the twelve tribes of Israel. Joseph was one of the twelve sons of Jacob.

Genesis 37:1-9

APPENDIX

1 Now Jacob dwelt in the land where his father was a stranger, in the land of Canaan. 2 This is the history of Jacob. Joseph, being seventeen years old, was feeding the flock with his brothers. And the lad was with the sons of Bilhah and the sons of Zilpah, his father's wives; and Joseph brought a bad report of them to his father. 3 Now Israel loved Joseph more than all his children, because he was the son of his old age. Also, he made him a tunic of many colors. 4 But when his brothers saw that their father loved him more than all his brothers, they hated him and could not speak peaceably to him. 5 Now Joseph had a dream, and he told it to his brothers; and they hated him even more. 6 So he said to them, "Please hear this dream which I have dreamed: 7 "There we were, binding sheaves in the field. Then behold, my sheaf arose and also stood upright; and indeed your sheaves stood all around and bowed down to my sheaf." 8 And his brothers said to him, "Shall you indeed reign over us? Or shall you indeed have dominion over us?" So they hated him even more for his dreams and for his words. 9 Then he dreamed still another dream and told it to his brothers, and said, "Look, I have dreamed another dream. And this time, the sun, the moon, and the eleven stars bowed down to me."

A tunic of many colors in v.3 means that it was a flowing robe of regality and Joseph was the well-favored son. He was also a shepherd.

Joseph is a type of Jesus, the well-beloved son of the Father (Matt. 3:17: "this is my beloved son in whom I am well pleased").

Jesus has a coat of regality as the beloved Son will return as King of kings and Lord of lords. Jesus also referred to Himself as the good shepherd –

John 10:11

11 "I am the good shepherd. The good shepherd gives His life for the sheep."

Just as Joseph's brothers hated him, so did the Jewish brethren hate Jesus at the first advent. And then Joseph has a dream:

Joseph's dream points to Christ's future rulership from the heavens (stars) over the earth in His Thousand-Year Reign as King of kings.

Just as Joseph's brothers mockingly say, "you will have dominion over us" so did the religious Jewish Pharisees (Jesus' Jewish brothers) mockingly question Jesus, "you will rule over us?" And just as Joseph's brothers were jealous and hated their brother Joseph, so did the Jewish brethren hate Jesus at His first advent.

Well Joseph's jealous, Jewish brothers plot to kill him, just as the jealous Jewish brethren plotted to kill Jesus:

Genesis 37:18-28

18 Now when they saw him afar off, even before he came near them, they conspired against him to kill him. 19 Then they said to one another, "Look, this dreamer is coming! 20 "Come therefore, let us now kill him and cast him into some pit; and we shall say, 'Some wild beast has

APPENDIX

devoured him.' We shall see what will become of his dreams!" 21 But Reuben heard it, and he delivered him out of their hands, and said, "Let us not kill him." 22 And Reuben said to them, "Shed no blood, but cast him into this pit which is in the wilderness, and do not lay a hand on him"--that he might deliver him out of their hands, and bring him back to his father. 23 So it came to pass, when Joseph had come to his brothers, that they stripped Joseph of his tunic, the tunic of many colors that was on him. 24 Then they took him and cast him into a pit. And the pit was empty; there was no water in it. 25 And they sat down to eat a meal. Then they lifted their eyes and looked, and there was a company of Ishmaelites, coming from Gilead with their camels, bearing spices, balm, and myrrh, on their way to carry them down to Egypt. 26 So Judah said to his brothers, "What profit is there if we kill our brother and conceal his blood? 27 "Come and let us sell him to the Ishmaelites, and let not our hand be upon him, for he is our brother and our flesh." And his brothers listened. 28 Then Midianite traders passed by; so the brothers pulled Joseph up and lifted him out of the pit, and sold him to the Ishmaelites for twenty shekels of silver. And they took Joseph to Egypt

The pit is a type of Christ's crucifixion, a place of death and the pit was empty and had no water in it. At the cross (the pit), Jesus was offered no water, just vinegar (sour wine), thereby fulfilling prophecy regarding the Messiah in Psalm 69:21 –

John 19:28-30

28 After this, Jesus, knowing that all things were now accomplished, that the Scripture might be fulfilled, said, "I thirst!" 29 Now a vessel full of sour wine was sitting there; and they filled a sponge with sour wine, put it on hyssop, and put it to His mouth. 30 So when Jesus had received the sour wine, He said, "It is finished!" And bowing His head, He gave up His spirit.

Psalm 69:21

21 They also gave me gall for my food, And for my thirst they gave me vinegar to drink.

After Christ's death He was buried in a tomb not used by another.

The pit being empty is a picture of Jesus hanging on the cross, paying the penalty of the sins of mankind, all alone.

And after His death, He was buried in a tomb that was empty and had never been used before:

John 19:41

Now in the place where He was crucified there was a garden, and in the garden a new tomb in which no one had yet been laid.

Joseph's Jewish brethren stripped him of his clothes just as Jesus was stripped of His tunic on the cross.

APPENDIX

Matthew 27:36

35 Then they crucified Him, and divided His garments, casting lots, that it might be fulfilled which was spoken by the prophet: "They divided My garments among them, And for My clothing they cast lots."

Jesus was sold by Judas for thirty pieces of silver, Joseph for twenty. The spices the Ishmaelites carried, balm and myrrh, were for burial foreshadowing Christ's death and burial.

Genesis 39:11-14

11 But it happened about this time, when Joseph went into the house to do his work, and none of the men of the house was inside, 12 that she caught him by his garment, saying, "Lie with me." But he left his garment in her hand, and fled and ran outside. 13 And so it was, when she saw that he had left his garment in her hand and fled outside, 14 that she called to the men of her house and spoke to them, saying, "See, he has brought in to us a Hebrew to mock us. He came in to me to lie with me, and I cried out with a loud voice."

Well, Joseph was sold as a slave to an Egyptian officer named Potiphar where he was falsely accused of adultery by Potiphar's wife.

Because of her accusations, Joseph was thrown into the prison.

Jesus was also falsely accused:

Matthew 26:59-60

"Now the chief priests, the elders, and all the council sought false testimony against Jesus to put Him to death, but found none. Even though many false witnesses came forward, they found none. But at last two false witnesses came forward"

Joseph is thrown into prison and he is able to explain the prisoners' dreams and the Pharaoh hears about this.

Joseph interprets Pharaoh's dream and tells him that there will be seven years of plenty followed by seven years of famine. Pharaoh allows Joseph to be the administrator over all the land:

Genesis 41:37-43

37 So the advice was good in the eyes of Pharaoh and in the eyes of all his servants. 38 And Pharaoh said to his servants, "Can we find such a one as this, a man in whom is the Spirit of God?" 39 Then Pharaoh said to Joseph, "Inasmuch as God has shown you all this, there is no one as discerning and wise as you. 40 "You shall be over my house, and all my people shall be ruled according to your word; only in regard to the throne will I be greater than you." 41 And Pharaoh said to Joseph, "See, I have set you over all the land of Egypt." 42 Then Pharaoh took his signet

APPENDIX

ring off his hand and put it on Joseph's hand; and he clothed him in garments of fine linen and put a gold chain around his neck. 43 And he had him ride in the second chariot which he had; and they cried out before him, "Bow the knee!" So, he set him over all the land of Egypt.

Here we see a picture of Christ too. That suffering preceded His glory. From the pit of death, the resurrected Christ has ascended to the right hand of the Father in the heavens.

Mark 16:19

19 So then, after the Lord had spoken to them, He was received up into heaven, and sat down at the right hand of God.

This exaltation of Joseph also foreshadows Christ's future return as King of Kings! And at that time, every tongue will confess that Jesus is Lord!

Philippians 2:10-11

10 that at the name of Jesus every knee should bow, of those in heaven, and of those on earth, and of those under the earth, 11 and that every tongue should confess that Jesus Christ is Lord, to the glory of God the Father.

After Joseph's rise to power, Joseph marries Pharaoh's priest's gentile daughter and has two sons.

Genesis 41:45, 50

And Pharaoh called Joseph's name Zaphnath-Paaneah. And he gave him as a wife Asenath, the daughter of Poti-Pherah priest of On. So Joseph went out over all the land of Egypt. ... 50 And to Joseph were born two sons before the years of famine came, whom Asenath, the daughter of Poti-Pherah priest of On, bore to him.

After Jesus' resurrection and ascension, Israel has been set aside while God's Spirit searches for a Bride for His Son from the gentile church.

After the rapture of the church, His gentile bride will be revealed at the Judgment Seat of Christ.

After our rapture, God then deals with Israel for the last seven years, known as the tribulation period. And just as Joseph's brothers did not recognize him the first time, the Jewish brethren did not recognize Jesus at the first advent. However, they will recognize Him the second time:

Genesis 45:1-7

1 Then Joseph could not restrain himself before all those who stood by him, and he cried out, "Make everyone go out from me!" So no one stood with him while Joseph made himself known to his brothers. 2 And he wept aloud, and the Egyptians and the house of Pharaoh heard it. 3 Then Joseph said to his brothers, "I am Joseph; does my father still live?" But his brothers could not

APPENDIX

answer him, for they were dismayed in his presence. 4 And Joseph said to his brothers, "Please come near to me." So they came near. Then he said: "I am Joseph your brother, whom you sold into Egypt. 5 "But now, do not therefore be grieved or angry with yourselves because you sold me here; for God sent me before you to preserve life. 6 "For these two years the famine has been in the land, and there are still five years in which there will be neither plowing nor harvesting. 7 "And God sent me before you to preserve a posterity for you in the earth, and to save your lives by a great deliverance.

Zechariah 12:10

"And I will pour on the house of David and on the inhabitants of Jerusalem the Spirit of grace and supplication; then they will look on Me whom they pierced. Yes, they will mourn for Him as one mourns for his only son, and grieve for Him as one grieves for a firstborn.

And finally, in the last chapter of Genesis we read:

Genesis 50:17-21

17 "Thus you shall say to Joseph: "I beg you, please forgive the trespass of your brothers and their sin; for they did evil to you." ' Now, please, forgive the trespass of the servants of the God of your father." And Joseph wept when they spoke to him. 18 Then his brothers also went and fell down before his face, and they said, "Behold, we are your servants." 19 Joseph said to them, "Do not be afraid, for am I in the place of God? 20 "But as for you, you meant evil against me; but God meant it for good, in order to bring it about as it is this day, to save many people alive. 21 "Now therefore, do not be afraid; I will provide for you and your little ones." And he comforted them and spoke kindly to them.

Just as Joseph said *God meant it for good*, we read in ***Romans 11:25-26 -***

25 For I do not desire, brethren, that you should be ignorant of this mystery, lest you should be wise in your own opinion, that blindness in part has happened to Israel until the fullness of the Gentiles has come in. 26 And so all Israel will be saved, as it is written: "The Deliverer will come out of Zion, And He will turn away ungodliness from Jacob;

APPENDIX

APPENDIX

Jesus in Revelation and Daniel

Rev. 1:12-17

12 Then I turned to see the voice that spoke with me. And having turned I saw seven golden lampstands, 13 and in the midst of the seven lampstands One like the Son of Man, clothed with a garment down to the feet and girded about the chest with a golden band. 14 His head and hair were white like wool, as white as snow, and His eyes like a flame of fire; 15 His feet were like fine brass, as if refined in a furnace, and His voice as the sound of many waters; 16 He had in His right hand seven stars, out of His mouth went a sharp two-edged sword, and His countenance was like the sun shining in its strength. 17 And when I saw Him, I fell at His feet as dead. But He laid His right hand on me, saying to me, "Do not be afraid; I am the First and the Last.

Like the son of man

Clothed in garment down to the feet

Girded about the chest w/a golden band (chest not waist as in Daniel)

Head and hair white like wool – as white as snow

Eyes like a flame of fire

Feet were like fine brass

Voice as the sound of many waters

7 stars in right hand

Sharp, two-edged sword in mouth

Countenance like sun shining in its strength

Laid right hand on me (John)

Said 'Do not be afraid'

Declared Himself as the first and the last

Dan. 10:5-9

5 I lifted my eyes and looked, and behold, a certain man clothed in linen, whose waist was girded with gold of Uphaz! 6 His body was like beryl, his face like the appearance of lightning, his eyes like torches of fire, his arms and feet like burnished bronze in color, and the sound of his words like the voice of a multitude. 7 And I, Daniel, alone saw the vision, for the men who were with me did not see the vision; but a great terror fell upon them, so that they fled to hide themselves. 8 Therefore I was left alone when I saw this great vision, and no strength remained in me; for my vigor was turned to frailty in me, and I retained no strength. 9 Yet I heard the sound of his words; and while I heard the sound of his words I was in a deep sleep on my face, with my face to the ground. Christ- Son of Man (Luke 5:24)

Clothed in linen

Waist girded with gold (waist not chest as in Revelation)

Body like beryl

Face like the appearance of lightning

Eyes like torches of fire

Arms and feet like bronze

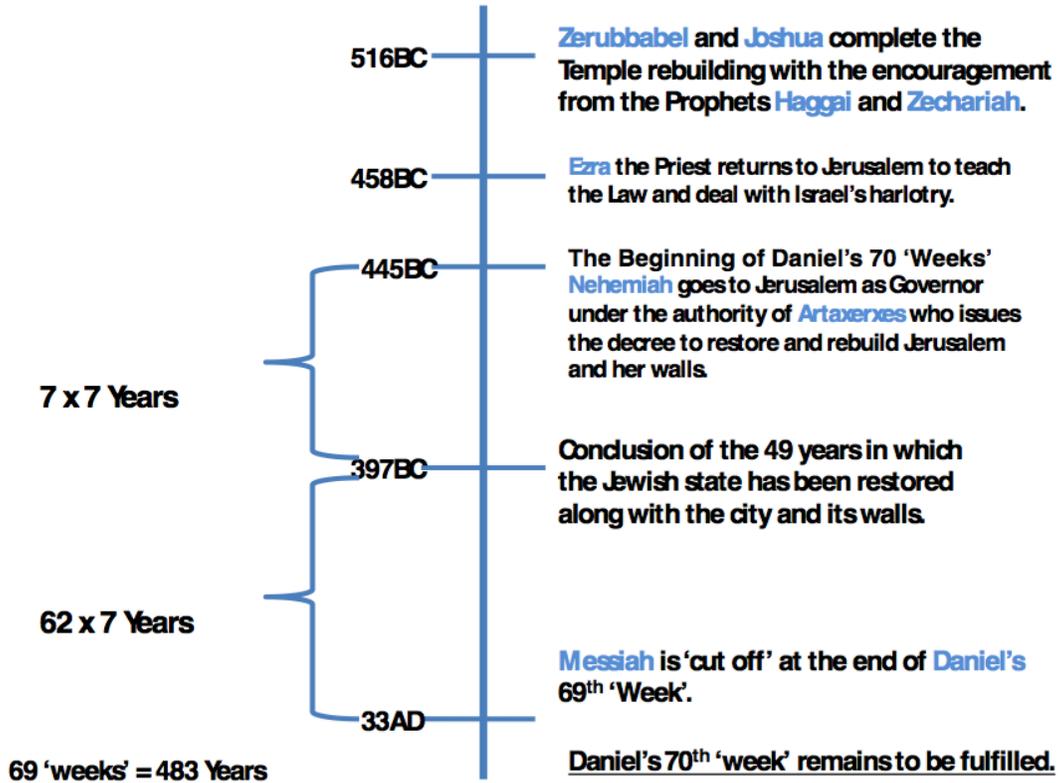
Words like the voice of a multitude

A Hand touched me

APPENDIX

APPENDIX

Daniel's 70 weeks



70 Years and Counting...

6

One week = 7 years

Daniel 9:24-27

24 "Seventy weeks are determined For your people and for your holy city, To finish the transgression, To make an end of sins, To make reconciliation for iniquity, To bring in everlasting righteousness, To seal up vision and prophecy, And to anoint the Most Holy. 25 "Know therefore and understand, That from the going forth of the command To restore and build Jerusalem Until Messiah the Prince, There shall be seven weeks and sixty-two weeks; The street shall be built again, and the wall, Even in troublesome times. 26 "And after the sixty-two weeks Messiah shall be cut off, but not for Himself; And the people of the prince who is to come Shall destroy the city and the sanctuary. The end of it shall be with a flood, And till the end of the war desolations are determined. 27 Then he shall confirm a covenant with many for **one week**; But in the middle of the week He shall bring an end to sacrifice and offering. And on the wing of abominations shall be one who makes desolate, Even until the consummation, which is determined, Is poured out on the desolate."

APPENDIX

In the above passage, noting that **a week equals seven years**, Daniel says *Seventy weeks are determined For your people and for your holy city, To finish the transgression, To make an end of sins.* In Daniel 9:25 it says that *from the going forth of the command to restore and build Jerusalem Until Messiah the Prince, There shall be seven weeks and sixty- two weeks...*

Seven weeks=seven 7-year period-

At the end of this period, the temple was rebuilt. $7 \times 7 = 49$ yrs

Sixty-two weeks= sixty-two 7-year period-

At the end of this period, Messiah is cut off (crucifixion). $62 \times 7 = 434$ yrs

The beginning of Jerusalem's restoration occurred in 445 B.C. and this was the beginning of Daniel's 70 Weeks or 70×7 years which equals 490 years. The restoration of Jerusalem was completed in 397 B.C. This was the first seven weeks (7×7 years).

After the restoration of Jerusalem in 397 B.C., we see that there are 62 weeks (or 62×7 years=434 years) until Messiah is cut off at the cross. So, we have the first 7×7 -year period with the rebuilding of Jerusalem followed by 62×7 - year period until the Messiah is crucified or *cut off*.

If we add up 7 weeks and 62 weeks, we have a total of 69 weeks or 483 years. We still have one more week (one week equals 7 years) to complete Daniel's 70 week prophecy (=490 years).

After the cross, Israel has been set aside while God deals with the Church. After the Church is raptured, God deals again with Israel in the 7-year tribulation known as the 70th week of Daniel. Daniel 9:26,27 speaks of this time.

APPENDIX

Seven Sevens and Seventy times Seven

The Sabbatical Year was also known as the Seventh Year since it was to be observed every seventh year.

Exodus 23:10-11

10 "Six years you shall sow your land and gather in its produce, 11 "but the seventh year you shall let it rest and lie fallow, that the poor of your people may eat; and what they leave, the beasts of the field may eat. In like manner you shall do with your vineyard and your olive grove.

With respect to the Land, the Sabbatical Year was also known as the Sabbath of the Land because the land was to have a complete rest from the cultivation for the year.

Leviticus 25:4

4 "but in the seventh year there shall be a sabbath of solemn rest for the land, a sabbath to the LORD. You shall neither sow your field nor prune your vineyard.

Deuteronomy 15:1-2

1 "At the end of every seven years you shall grant a release of debts. 2 "And this is the form of the release: Every creditor who has lent anything to his neighbor shall release it; he shall not require it of his neighbor or his brother, because it is called the LORD's release.

According to the Deuteronomy passage above, what else was Israel commanded to do during the Sabbatical year?

The Sabbatical Year was also known as the Year of Release because farming and debt payment was released for the year.

APPENDIX

Deuteronomy 31:10-11

10 And Moses commanded them, saying: "At the end of every seven years, at the appointed time in the year of release, at the Feast of Tabernacles, 11 "when all Israel comes to appear before the LORD your God in the place which He chooses, you shall read this law before all Israel in their hearing.

In the above passage, we can see that at the *end of every seven years*, the Sabbatical Year, during the Feast of Tabernacles, they were to read the law of God before all Israel. The Feast of Tabernacles (also known as the Feast of In Gatherings) was the most joyous and festive of Israel's feasts. This feast commemorated God's past goodness and provision during their wilderness journey, and it commemorated God's present goodness and provision with the completion of the harvest. And, as we will soon see, the Feast of Tabernacles points to God's future goodness and provision in the 1,000 - year Reign of Christ, when Israel will be brought into the covenanted land after their national repentance. Their debt of sin will have been released at the end of the seven - year tribulation (Dt. 31:10).

Seven 7s

Now let's examine another way the number 7 is seen in Scripture. God also uses seven periods of 7 years, or the equation, 7x7, which of course would come to 49 years. After 7x 7 years (49 years) follows the 50th year, which is a year of celebration for Israel.

After seven sabbatical years had passed (seven 7s), Israel was to observe the 50th year, called the Jubilee Year. The shofur (ram's horn) was to be blown to announce that the Jubilee Year had commenced. During this year, the land was to remain at rest. All hired workers were to be set free. All slaves were released.

Leviticus 25:39-43, 54-55

39 'And if one of your brethren who dwells by you becomes poor, and sells himself to you, you shall not compel him to serve as a slave. 40 'As a hired servant and a sojourner he shall be with you, and shall serve you until the Year of Jubilee. 41 'And then he shall depart from you--he and his children with him-- and shall return to his own family. He shall return to the possession of his

APPENDIX

fathers. 42 'For they are My servants, whom I brought out of the land of Egypt; they shall not be sold as slaves. 43 'You shall not rule over him with rigor, but you shall fear your God. ... 54 'And if he is not redeemed in these years, then he shall be released in the Year of Jubilee--he and his children with him. 55 'For the children of Israel are servants to Me; they are My servants whom I brought out of the land of Egypt: I am the LORD your God.

According to v. 41, what else happened during the Jubilee Year?

We can see that during the Jubilee Year, all the land was to be returned to its original owner (Lev. 25:13, 23-28), thus preserving the identity of the tribes of Israel and their allotted inheritance of the land (Num. 36:4,7).

This 50th year, the Jubilee Year follows seven 7-year periods. The Year of Jubilee portrays a future time when Israel will be restored by their Messiah Jesus and brought into their land in the Messianic Kingdom. They will no longer be under the oppression of Gentile rule and they will be set free.

After 7x 7 years, their debt of sin will be forgiven **after** they appropriate the blood of their Passover Lamb, Jesus, and are brought to a place of repentance.

We can see another example of this type when Joshua (whose name means *Jesus* in Hebrew), defeats the Gentile nation at Jericho.

Joshua 6:4, 15

*4 "And **seven** priests shall bear **seven** trumpets of rams' horns before the ark. But the **seventh day** you shall march around the city **seven times**, and the priests shall blow the trumpets. ... 15 But it came to pass on the seventh day that they rose early, about the dawning of the day, and marched around the city seven times in the same manner. On that day only they marched around the city seven times.*

Israel followed Joshua's instructions and on the 7th day they marched 7 times (7x7) around the walls, and the walls of Jericho came tumbling down; the

APPENDIX

Gentile nation was defeated. The destruction of the Gentile nations will occur at the end of the tribulation.

APPENDIX

Seventy Sevens and the 70 weeks of Daniel

Now let's review 7x7 (=49 years or seven weeks) and 7x7x10 (=490 years or seven weeks x10) in the Book of Daniel.

Please take note that seven years is often referred to as a week in Scripture. Please also take note that the Book of Daniel addresses the Nation of Israel, not the Church.

Daniel Chapter 2 is the foundational chapter for understanding the rest of the Book of Daniel. It gives a complete overview of **The Times of the Gentiles** beginning with Nebuchadnezzar through to when **The Times of the Gentiles** are fulfilled, and the Millennial Kingdom of Christ is set up. Please review the Times of the Gentiles timeline at the end of the chapter.

Luke 21:24

*24 "And they will fall by the edge of the sword, and be led away captive into all nations. And Jerusalem will be trampled by Gentiles until **the times of the Gentiles** are fulfilled.*

The Book of Daniel deals with the Jewish people in relation to The Times of the Gentiles, with a particular emphasis on that which will occur during the final seven years of this time.

The Times of the Gentiles is that period of time when Israel finds the scepter removed from her hand and placed in the hands of the Gentile nations.

Due to Israel's disobedience, Israel was taken captive in the year 605 B.C. by the Babylonian Empire ruled by King Nebuchadnezzar. Daniel, a prophet of Israel was taken into Babylonian captivity during this period.

Darius the Mede takes over the Babylonian kingdom in 539 B.C. followed by Persian rule under Cyrus in 538 B.C. **All of these Gentile powers had their seat of government in Babylon.**

APPENDIX

Jeremiah 25:11-12

*11 'And this whole land shall be a desolation and an astonishment, and these nations shall serve the king of Babylon **seventy years**. 12 'Then it will come to pass, when seventy years are completed, that I will punish the king of Babylon and that nation, the land of the Chaldeans, for their iniquity,' says the LORD; 'and I will make it a perpetual desolation.*

How long was Israel to be held under captivity according to v.11?

Israel was under captivity for 70 years as prophesized by the prophet Jeremiah years before this event occurred.

Daniel 9:2

*2 in the first year of his reign I, Daniel, understood by the books the number of the years specified by the word of the LORD through Jeremiah the prophet, that He would accomplish **seventy years** in the desolations of Jerusalem.*

Please refer to charts 1 and 2 below, produced by Ann Herbert. Review chart 1 and the timeline at the end of this lesson – **The Times of the Gentiles**. The Times of the Gentiles begins in 605 B.C. and will end at the completion of the seven-year tribulation.

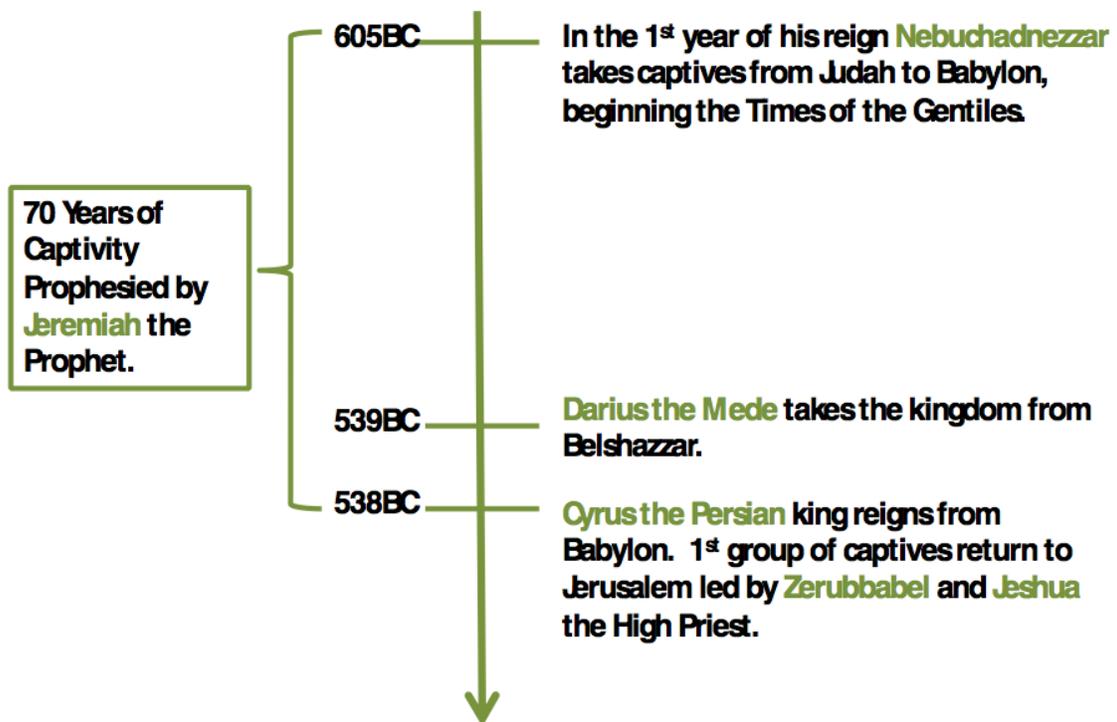
After the 70 years of captivity, Israel is allowed to begin the restoration and rebuilding of Jerusalem and her walls in 445 B.C. Refer to Chart 2.

Please take note that in the Jewish calendar, a year is made up of 360 days, not 365 days. In examining the dates, the dates may not always match up exactly. This can be explained by the fact that the Jews counted part of their year as a whole year, just as with saw with counting part of a day as a whole day.

Also, the historical dates are just that: dates worked out by historians as best they could.

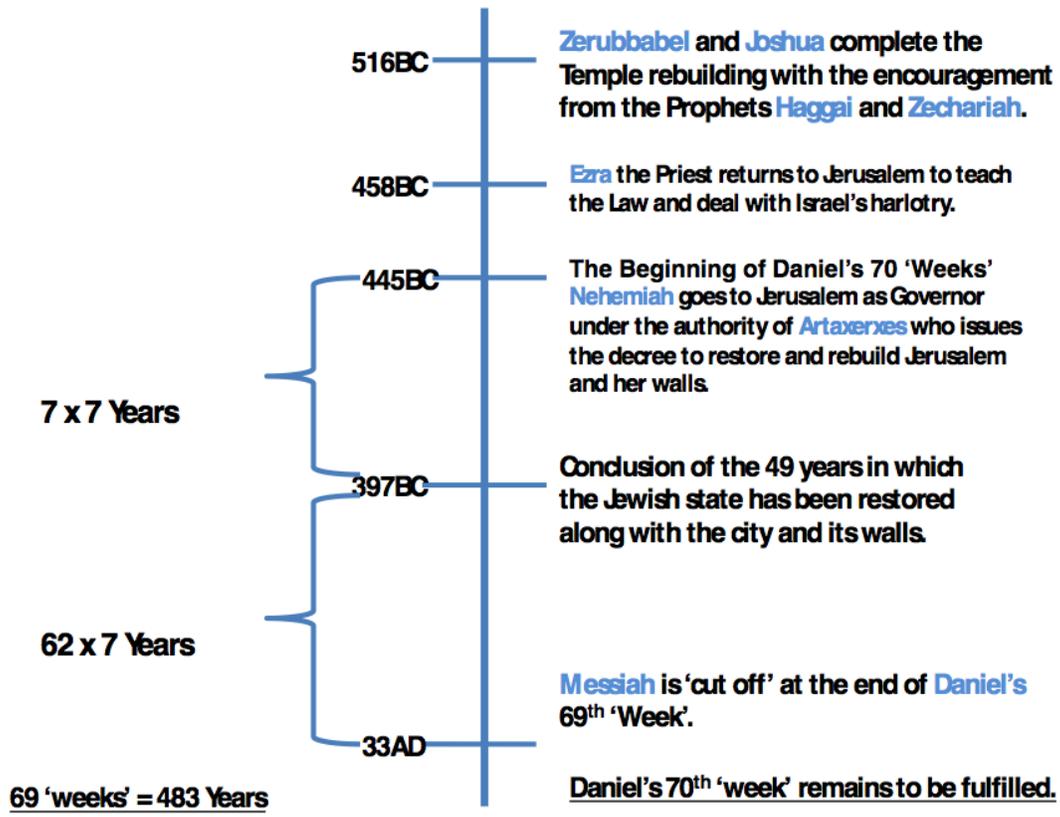
APPENDIX

Chart 1



APPENDIX

Chart 2



70 Years and Counting...

6

APPENDIX

By reviewing charts 1 and 2, can you see that after **7x7 years**, the restoration and rebuilding of Jerusalem is completed in 397 B.C.? After 7x7 years, and in the fiftieth year, Israel is set free as observed in the Jubilee Year.

Daniel also prophesized about Israel's future restoration in the following passage:

Daniel 9:24-27

24 "Seventy weeks are determined For your people and for your holy city, To finish the transgression, To make an end of sins, To make reconciliation for iniquity, To bring in everlasting righteousness, To seal up vision and prophecy, And to anoint the Most Holy. 25 "Know therefore and understand, That from the going forth of the command To restore and build Jerusalem Until Messiah the Prince, There shall be seven weeks and sixty-two weeks; The street shall be built again, and the wall, Even in troublesome times. 26 "And after the sixty-two weeks Messiah shall be cut off, but not for Himself; And the people of the prince who is to come Shall destroy the city and the sanctuary. The end of it shall be with a flood, And till the end of the war desolations are determined. 27 Then he shall confirm a covenant with many for one week; But in the middle of the week He shall bring an end to sacrifice and offering. And on the wing of abominations shall be one who makes desolate, Even until the consummation, which is determined, Is poured out on the desolate."

In the above passage, noting that **a week equals seven years**, Daniel says *Seventy weeks are determined For your people and for your holy city, To finish the transgression, To make an end of sins.*

In v. 25 it says *from the going forth of the command To restore and build Jerusalem Until Messiah the Prince, There shall be seven weeks and sixty-two weeks.*

Please refer to the chart 2 and the Times of the Gentiles timeline and the following table.

As mentioned earlier, Daniel deals with the nation of Israel.

APPENDIX

A week = 7 years in Daniel's prophecy given in Daniel 9.
Seventy weeks are determined for Israel to finish or make an end to their transgressions and seventy weeks = 70×7 years = 490 years total.

In Daniel 9:25 it says that from the going forth of the command to restore and build Jerusalem Until Messiah the Prince, There shall be seven weeks and sixty-two weeks...

Seven weeks=seven 7-year period-

At the end of this period, the temple was rebuilt.

$7 \times 7 = 49$ yrs

Sixty-two weeks= sixty-two 7-year period-

At the end of this period, Messiah is cut off (crucifixion).

$62 \times 7 = 434$ yrs

T

The beginning of Jerusalem's restoration occurred in 445 B.C. and this was the beginning of Daniel's 70 Weeks or 70×7 years which equals 490 years. The restoration of Jerusalem was completed in 397 B.C. This was the first seven weeks (7×7 years).

After the restoration of Jerusalem in 397 B.C., we see that there are 62 weeks (or 62×7 years=434 years) until Messiah is cut off at the cross. So, we have the first 7×7 -year period with the rebuilding of Jerusalem followed by 62×7 -year period until the Messiah is crucified or cut off.

If we add up 7 weeks and 62 weeks, we have a total of 69 weeks or 483 years. We still have one more week (one week equals 7 years) to complete Daniel's 70 Week prophecy.

After the cross, Israel has been set aside while God deals with the Church. After the Church is raptured, God deals again with Israel in the 7-year tribulation known as the 70th week of Daniel. Daniel 9:26,27 speaks of this time.

As stated above, Daniel says Seventy weeks are determined For your people and for your holy city, To finish the transgression, To make an end of sins. Seventy weeks equals 70×7 years which equals 490 years ($7 \times 7 \times 10$). Ten is the number of completion, so 490 years represents a complete period of time,

APPENDIX

after which Israel will be forgiven of their sins (debt of sin) and brought into the Land as in the Jubilee year, in the 1,000-year Messianic era.

Their debts (sin debts) will be paid, and their celebratory Jubilee Year will be experienced in His Glorious Kingdom out ahead!

[Remember that this 50th year, the Jubilee Year, follows seven 7-year periods (Seven Sabbatical years= 7×7). The Year of Jubilee portrays a future time when Israel will be restored by their Messiah Jesus and brought into their land in the Messianic Kingdom. They will no longer be under the oppression of Gentile rule, and they will be set free. After 490 years ($7 \times 7 \times 10$ years), their debt of sin will be forgiven after they appropriate the blood of their Passover Lamb, Jesus, and are brought to a place of repentance. This Jubilee will be fulfilled and completed at the end of $7 \times 7 \times 10$ years = 490 years (10 being the number of completion)].

Peter, who was of Jewish blood, asked Jesus how often shall my brother sin against me, and I forgive him?

Matthew 18:21-22

21 Then Peter came to Him and said, "Lord, how often shall my brother sin against me, and I forgive him? Up to seven times?" 22 Jesus said to him, "I do not say to you, up to seven times, but up to seventy times seven.

Remember that a week equals a 7-year period. Jesus tells Peter that they should forgive seventy times seven which represents a 490-year period after which Israel's sins are forgiven and they are set free from Gentile rule and brought into their covenanted land.

APPENDIX